

THE PRODIGIES WAR

Chapter 2251 Golden Dragon Cocoon

The terrifying being who resembled a youth fixed his gaze on the depths of the sea.

Lin Xun kept sinking like a falling meteor, plummeting hundreds and thousands of feet...until he vanished into the abyssal depths, nine thousand feet below.

The young man remained motionless, his expression grave. His spirit sense hovered cautiously around the depths of nine thousand feet, never daring to probe too far.

He knew all too well that the terror that lurked nine thousand feet beneath the sea was beyond comprehension!

Throughout history, the East Sea had been known as the Sea of Sins, Forbidden Zone of Life, a place devoid of life, where even the strongest beings dared not tread.

Several old antiques with profound cultivation had attempted various methods to investigate its depths, yet none had ever uncovered the secret hidden beyond nine thousand feet.

But the young man knew very well.

The fact that the True Dragon Lineage was able to migrate from the Ancient Nebula Road to this world during the primeval era, ultimately rising to dominance and earning the world's reverence, was deeply intertwined with the mysterious 'being' lurking beneath the nine-thousand-foot depths of the Sea of Sins!

It was only after a long while that the young man withdrew his gaze, murmuring, "It's unfortunate that those descendants of the True Dragon Lineage..."

He turned around and left.

In the Dragon Palace, as the young man's figure returned, countless True Dragon Clan experts who had been waiting immediately fell to their knees in reverence. Only those at the Emperor Stage remained standing.

"Paying respect to Ancestor Soul Slaying!"

"Paying respect to Ancestor Soul Slaying!"

Between heaven and earth, solemn voices echoed with deep reverences, and every face was filled with awe.

It was as though they saw a divine being!

“The enemy has been eliminated. Today’s matter must not be leaked to anyone. If I hear a word, I will kill without mercy.”

The young man known as Ancestor Soul Slaying spoke indifferently, his tone carrying an unquestionable authority, as if delivering a decree from the heavens. This only made the gathered experts of the True Dragon Clan even more reverent.

After a brief pause, the youthful-looking Ancestor Soul Slaying asked, “In this battle...how many Emperors did our True Dragon Clan lose?”

An old monster hesitated for a moment before murmuring, “Reporting to Old Ancestor, our clan’s loss this time...is quite severe.”

“How severe?” Ancestor Soul Slaying frowned.

The old monster trembled inwardly before still mustering the courage to respond, “We lost one ninth realm Emperor, three eighth realm Emperors, five seventh realm Emperors, and one sixth realm Emperor...”

With each word, Ancestor Soul Slaying’s expression grew increasingly grim.

When he finally learned that a total of seventeen Emperors from the True Dragon Lineage had perished in that battle alone, his expression became as dark and heavy as storm-laden clouds.

Everyone present felt as if an invisible mountain was pressing down on them, making it almost impossible to breathe. The aura emanating from Ancestor Soul Slaying was simply too terrifying.

“The loss of so many Emperors has crippled half of our clan’s strength. This is more than just broken bones, it’s a devastating blow to our very foundation...” Ancestor Soul Slaying sighed, his voice brimming with an unparalleled murderous intent that made the heavens wail. He knew all too well that even after thousands of years, the clan would struggle to recover from today’s catastrophe.

And all this was caused by just a few humans and a dog!

“Do you know their identities?” After a moment of silence, Ancestor Soul Slaying questioned.

Immediately, someone stepped forward and reported the origins of Lin Xun.

Upon hearing this, Ancestor Soul Slaying frowned. After a brief pause, a cold smile spread across his face, “Lu Boya! He stole the Tribulation Dragon Nine Transformations from my clan back then and nearly destroyed the foundation of our lineage. I haven’t settled that score with him yet and now his successor dares to act wild. Do they think the True Dragon Lineage is easy to trample on?”

A deep silence followed, with no one daring to speak a word.

In truth, only a handful of people within the True Dragon Lineage were aware of the enmity between Lu Boya and the True Dragon Clan. This was because what Lu Boya had done in the past was considered a great shame and humiliation. Who would want such a stain on their history to be made public to the outside world?

“From this day forward, no outsider is allowed to enter the Dragon Palace without permission.” With those cold words, Ancestor Soul Slaying turned and vanished into thin air.

The True Dragon Lineage experts all felt a heavy weight lift from their shoulders. They exchanged glances, and though the lingering gloom on their faces remained, the tension had dissipated, replaced by a sense of relief and release.

After all, Lin Xun and his group had been dealt with, so there was no longer any need for anger or worry. The only thing that weighed heavily on their minds was the huge loss their clan had suffered in this clash.

As for the attendant elders who served the True Dragon Lineage, they wore grim expressions and their hearts were heavy with despair. An opportunity that could have changed the fate of their clans had been shattered just like that?!

They were all left feeling suffocated.

.....

Ancestral Dragon Mountain, the sacred ancestral land of the True Dragon Lineage, took the form of a massive, reclining dragon stretching across the horizon. Throughout the year, the mountain was enveloped in mist, swirling with chaotic energy that obscured its true form.

Dragon Pond, nestled at the heart of Ancestral Dragon Mountain, was a sacred place as huge as a lake. It shimmered with the ancient power of the Ancestral Dragon, exuding a mystical energy.

At this moment, within the Dragon Pond, a huge golden dragon cocoon floated serenely. The surface of the cocoon was etched with intricate ancestral dragon runes, which intertwined to form a mysterious and ancient totem. Swirls of chaotic innate spiritual energy danced through the air, filling the surroundings with a dreamlike aura.

Upon closer inspection, one would notice that the golden dragon cocoon emitted a strange, rhythmic pulse every once in a while, akin to the gentle rise and fall of breathing, flickering in and out of existence.

Near the Dragon Pond, figures sat cross-legged, their gazes fixed intently on the massive dragon cocoon being nurtured within.

Not far from them, towering piles of precious treasures lay stacked, each one more valuable than the last, capable of inciting envy and desire even among Emperors.

However, these treasures were specially prepared for the golden dragon cocoon. Every so often, a new batch would be released, allowing the cocoon to absorb their power, like a process of gestation and incubation.

A handsome young man in a jade robe furrowed his brows and asked, “Father, it’s been decades. Why hasn’t cousin Jingxuan awakened from her transformation yet?”

A man with a neat beard and a dignified, calm expression replied, “Hengyu, the greater the opportunity, the more difficult it is to attain. What you must do now is patiently attune yourself to the rhythm and fluctuations of this dragon cocoon. Only then will you be able to assist Jingxuan when she emerges from it.”

If any members of the True Dragon Lineage were present, they would undoubtedly recognize the young man—Ao Hengyu, the eldest prince of the True Dragon Clan.

And the imposing middle-aged man was Ao Huanhai, the current patriarch of the True Dragon Clan!

For decades, the father and son had remained in this place, never leaving, patiently waiting for the moment when the golden dragon cocoon would finally break open.

“Assist her?” A chuckle rang out suddenly, “When did the True Dragon Clan become hypocrites? You’re not trying to help, but you’re just looking to steal the bloodline talent from your own clan member. No need to hide it. Just say it outright.”

The speaker wore purple clothes, her hair matching the shade and accentuating her gorgeous appearance. An air of cold arrogance radiated from her. She was none other than Yanxing who came from the other side of the cosmos!

Upon hearing her words, Ao Hengyu’s expression darkened.

Ao Huanhai spoke with calm authority, “My niece is a sinner to begin with. Taking the bloodline from the child she carries is simply letting her to atone for her past sins.

“Moreover, this time we are merely extracting the ancestral dragon bloodline from the bastard she is carrying. We have no intention of harming Jingxuan. How is this not assisting her? How are we hypocrites?”

As he spoke, he tossed another batch of treasures into the Dragon Pond. The treasures instantly transformed into dazzling essence liquid as they flowed into the golden dragon cocoon.

Yanxing scoffed, “You’re acting innocent. If the child she carries didn’t possess the bloodline talent of my clan, it could never awaken the blood of the Ancestral Dragon of your True Dragon Lineage.”

Ao Huanhai’s smile tightened slightly, but he remained composed, “Fellow Daoist, there’s no need for further debate. As long as you help my clan extract the child’s innate power, the Ancestral Dragon Blood will be yours, as promised.”

It was a transaction!

This had been agreed several years ago when the purple-clothed woman Yanxing first approached the True Dragon Lineage.

“If my guess is correct, within three years, the golden dragon cocoon will hatch, and once Zhao Jingxuan has absorbed enough essence from the treasures, the child within her will be born. You...are you not worried that I’ll take the child then?” Yanxing said thoughtfully, her words striking at Ao Huanhai’s greatest concern. His brows furrowed in response.

Originally, Ao Huanhai had planned to raise the child as a pure-blooded descendant of the clan once he was born. He intended for the child to recognize him as his grandfather and Ao Hengyu, his eldest son, as his father.

As for Zhao Jingxuan, she would be imprisoned for eternity, her identity erased from the child’s memory.

In this way, when the child grew up, he would believe the True Dragon Lineage was his true heritage.

Unfortunately, there were hidden risks. After all, no secret could remain completely secure in this world. If the events of the Thousand Dragon Celestial Assembly from ten years ago were exposed and the child learned the truth, it would undoubtedly cause significant trouble.

However, when Yanxing appeared, Ao Huanhai saw a new opportunity: Seize the newborn’s innate bloodline power!

The members of the True Dragon Lineage couldn’t do this, but Yanxing could!

Therefore, Ao Huanhai agreed to the deal without hesitation. Once the transaction was complete, he would give her the Ancestral Dragon Blood she desired.

Still, deep down, Ao Huanhai couldn't help but worry that Yanxing might have her own agenda!

He knew full well about the background of Yanxing. She hailed from an immortal clan on the other side of the cosmos, a faction so powerful that even the True Dragon Lineage dared not offend. Their foundation was unfathomably deep and terrifying.

If Yanxing decided to take action on the child, the repercussions would be catastrophic.

"Fellow Daoist, please don't joke around like that." Ao Huanhai composed himself and said with a smile, "For the sake of the child, our True Dragon Clan will stop at nothing."

This was a subtle reminder but also a veiled warning.

Yanxing hummed in acknowledgment and replied, "And what if, at that moment, I really do something to disappoint you?"

Shua!

At this moment, the void rippled, and Ancestor Soul Slaying, appearing like a young man, appeared out of thin air.

His gaze locked onto Yanxing with cold, unyielding eyes and he declared, "Then let's see if I'll be the one to end your life myself then!"

Chapter 2252 Meeting an Old Friend on the Seafloor

Every word from Ancestor Soul Slaying dripped with murderous intent, carrying an unmistakable threat.

Yanxing remained unfazed and just smiled coldly, "I may be powerless within the Dragon Palace, but you all don't understand the true significance of a child born with the Grand Abyss Heaven Devourer talent. If you insist on playing with fire, then by all means continue."

Ancestor Soul Slaying, his expression unreadable, sat down beside the Dragon Pond and suddenly said, "The Grand Abyss Heaven Devourer talent involves the laws of time, doesn't it?"

Yanxing's expression flickered.

Before she could respond, Ancestor Soul Slaying exhaled slowly, a satisfied glint in his eyes. “Indeed, in that case, you definitely can’t take the child with you.”

Ao Huanhai and Ao Hengyu were both dumbstruck. *An innate talent that involves the laws of time?!*

This simply defies heavens!

When their gazes returned to the golden dragon cocoon in the Dragon Pond, their expressions had completely changed. Ao Hengyu, in particular, stared intently, his eyes burning with an intense light.

That child not only possesses the pure bloodline of the Ancestral Dragon, but is also born with a terrifying talent linked to the laws of time. If I could control it...

At this thought, Ao Hengyu’s heart trembled with excitement.

However, Yanxing seemed to realize something as her eyes suddenly turned terrifyingly cold, “The one who broke into the Dragon Palace—was he called Lin Xun?”

Ancestor Soul Slaying did not conceal anything and replied, “That’s correct, but that little bastard is now dead beneath nine thousand feet of the Sea of Sins. If he hadn’t activated his innate power to stop time, I would never have imagined just how heaven-defying the Grand Abyss Heaven Devourer talent truly is.”

Yanxing’s expression flickered.

Ao Huanhai and Ao Hengyu were both struck dumb. Of course they knew who Lin Xun was. He was the successor of Lu Boya, Zhao Jingxuan’s partner, and the father of the child she carried!

However, they never expected that the intruder who had thrown the Dragon Palace into turmoil would be the young man they loathed and despised so much.

“Is that little bastard here for the child?” Ao Hengyu blurted out.

Ancestor Soul Slaying spoke indifferently, “It doesn’t matter why he came. He’s already dead. Since ancient times, no one has ever returned alive from beneath the nine-thousand-foot depths of the Sea of Sins.”

Yanxing frowned and asked, “How can you be so sure?”

“Fellow Daoist, do you think our True Dragon Lineage does not know who resides nine thousand feet below? Speaking of this matter, it is deeply intertwined with your Luo Clan.” A faint trace of resentment flickered in his tone.

“Are you blaming my Luo Clan for what happened in the past?” Yanxing's eyes turned icy as she stared at Ancestor Soul Slaying, “Don’t forget, if not for our past considerations, your clan would have been eradicated along with that old thing sealed beneath the Sea of Sins!”

Yanxing’s blunt response left Ancestor Soul Slaying speechless for a moment, his expression stiffening as a flicker of unease crossed his eyes.

However, Yanxing had no intention of stopping and continued, “And Dragon Emperor Mingluo—how did he disappear? You...you wouldn’t have forgotten, right?”

“Enough!” Ancestor Soul Slaying bellowed, his face darkening, “Fellow Daoist, you may be from the Luo Clan but your surname is not Luo. This is the Dragon Palace, so you would do well to know your place!”

Yanxing’s eyes flashed as she said expressionlessly, “I’m merely reminding you...Lin Xun may not have fallen so easily in the Sea of Sins.”

Ancestor Soul Slaying sneered, “Let me remind you—focus on what you came here for and you’ll leave with the Ancestral Dragon Blood alive. But if you meddle in matters that don’t concern you, don’t blame me if your life is at stake.”

Yanxing frowned, but ultimately chose to remain silent.

Ao Hengyu looked utterly bewildered. He had no knowledge of how Dragon Emperor Mingluo had disappeared, nor did he understand what kind of terrifying existence lay sealed beneath the Sea of Sins.

Just as Ao Hengyu was about to inquire further, Ao Huanhai shook his head and said, “That’s the most closely guarded secret of our clan. No one will know about it in the future, so it’s best not to ask about it.”

Ao Hengyu felt a cold shiver run down his spine.

He was the current crown prince of the True Dragon Clan, yet he was not qualified to pry into such ancient secrets. What could those secrets possibly be?

“It will take at least three years for this dragon cocoon to transform. I hope there won’t be any more setbacks during these three years...” Yanxing murmured, her tone laced with a hint of concern.

Ancestor Soul Slaying and Ao Huanhai wore indifferent expressions, their faces showing no trace of concern. They were unafraid of anything on Ancestral Dragon Mountain. The only thing that worried them was that Yanxing, who was from the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos, might go back on her word.

Ao Hengyu pushed aside thoughts of the ancient secrets that he would never know. His full attention shifted to the golden dragon cocoon, his body of qi focusing in on the obscure, mysterious fluctuations it emitted.

If possible, he wished to seize the supreme fortune hidden within it immediately.

.....

After the bloody storm, the Dragon Palace had returned to a semblance of peace, but everyone was well aware that the True Dragon Lineage had been gravely wounded by the carnage.

The loss of the Emperors alone was a devastating blow, one that would cripple the True Dragon Lineage for thousands of years to come. It would take them countless generations to even begin to recover from it.

Although Ancestor Soul Slaying had already issued an order to suppress all news, the truth could not remain hidden forever.

This was because within the Dragon Palace, the attendant elders from the nine imperial clans who had served the True Dragon Lineage for countless years had secretly developed their own agendas.

In just a few days, the nine imperial clans had learned of the bloody massacre that took place in the Dragon Palace.

The news of Lin Xun, who possessed the Tribulation Dragon Nine Transformations, being hunted down by Ancestor Soul Slaying and cast into the depths of the East Sea struck them like a heavy blow.

After finally seeing an opportunity that could change the fate of their clans, it vanished just like that without a trace. The disappointment and frustration among the nine imperial clans were palpable.

Soon, through the quiet but swift spread of information by the nine great imperial clans, news of the severe blow to the True Dragon Clan and its grave injuries quickly reached various territories across the True Dragon World, sparking widespread shock and outrage.

By the time the True Dragon Lineage reacted, the news had already spread far and wide, beyond their control, and could no longer be suppressed or contained...

.....

A strange power permeated the chilling waters, and darkness descended like a heavy curtain, completely engulfing the area nine thousand feet below the East Sea.

The moment Lin Xun entered these depths, a terrifying and malevolent aura rushed at him!

Lin Xun shuddered, as if he was being stared at by the god of death. A chilling sense of danger washed over him. However, before he could even react, a powerful hand seized his arm, dragging him deeper into the dark depths of the sea.

Rumble!

The dark water churned around him, and just as Lin Xun was about to fight back, a voice rang in his ears.

“Don’t struggle, and don’t probe with your spirit sense!”

Lin Xun froze for a moment. The voice sounded familiar...

It wasn’t until a moment later that Lin Xun slowly adjusted to the terrifying pressure of the sea as he continued to sink.

However, because he dared not use his spirit sense, all he could see was an impenetrable darkness, like an endless, suffocating night.

It wasn’t until he had sunk to ten thousand feet that the powerful hand around him finally began to loosen. At the moment, Lin Xun saw a faint speck of light, glowing brightly against the suffocating darkness of the seafloor.

The light was soft and warm, like a gentle shower of radiance. It turned out to be a crystal-clear bead quietly suspended in the water.

When Lin Xun reached the area illuminated by the bead, a sense of relief washed over him. The terrifying pressure that had been suffocating him and the cold, dangerous aura that surrounded him seemed to vanish as if blocked by the light.

“Little Friend, we meet again.”

As the voice echoed, a figure appeared near the light. The tall, slender figure was draped in a green robe, exuding an air of majesty, as though he was a king descending upon the world.

He gazed at Lin Xun with a smile, his eyes alight with both surprise and delight.

Lin Xun was stunned. “Uncle, is that really you?”

This man in green was Zhao Jingxuan’s father, Zhao Yuanji, the emperor of the Ziyao Empire!

“It’s a long story. Let’s sit down and take a rest first.” Zhao Yuanji said, sitting cross-legged.

Lin Xun nodded and also sat down, but his mind remained a bit hazy.

Just moments ago, he had narrowly escaped a perilous calamity, but in the blink of an eye, he found himself encountering an acquaintance he hadn’t seen in a long time. He was still in disbelief.

Why would Zhao Yuanji...be here, nine thousand feet beneath the sea?

Unbelievable.

Soon, Zhao Yuanji began to explain the reason.

It turned out that decades ago, upon hearing that the True Dragon Lineage was convening the Thousand Dragon Celestial Assembly, Zhao Yuanji and Ao Xingtang, Zhao Jingxuan’s mother, set out for the True Dragon World.

Ao Xingtang had originally intended to use the Thousand Dragon Celestial Assembly as an opportunity to venture nine thousand feet beneath the East Sea and rescue a terrifying existence that had been suppressed there for countless years.

However, who would have thought that they would inadvertently discover that their daughter Zhao Jingxuan had also participated in the Thousand Dragon Celestial Assembly?!

They knew something was wrong then.

Ao Xingtang, being a descendant of the True Dragon Lineage, did a little inquiry and she uncovered the hidden truth: the child Zhao Jingxuan was carrying was likely being targeted!

This left Zhao Yuanji and Ao Xingtang extremely anxious, yet helpless. With just the two of them, storming the Dragon Palace to rescue Zhao Jingxuan was simply impossible.

Thus, following Ao Xingtang’s plan, they made a bold decision to enter the Sea of Sins, descending nine thousand feet beneath the sea. They waited there for the right opportunity to act.

Upon understanding this, Lin Xun finally realized that their meeting was no coincidence. Just like him, Zhao Yuanji and his wife had come to rescue Zhao Jingxuan.

“Where’s Auntie now?” asked Lin Xun.

Zhao Yuanji replied casually, “Thinking of ways to establish contact with the terrifying existence suppressed here. If we can receive his help, perhaps the threat of the True Dragon Lineage will no longer be something to fear.”

Lin Xun couldn’t help but ask, “Who is this terrifying existence?”

On his way to the True Dragon Lineage, he had already heard of the Sea of Sins and the Forbidden Zone of Life, as well as the horrors lurking nine thousand feet beneath its surface. It was said that since ancient times, no one who had ventured into its depths had ever returned alive.

What no one had expected was that beneath this Sea of Sins lay a terrifying existence that had been forcibly suppressed!

Chapter 2253 The Cruel Truth!

Zhao Yuanji thought for a moment and replied, “Your Auntie didn’t say it, but I believe the terrifying existence is an ancient figure of the True Dragon Lineage.”

Lin Xun exclaimed in surprise, “The True Dragon Lineage?”

It seemed absurd. If the being sealed beneath the Sea of Sins was truly from the True Dragon Lineage, then why had the experts of the clan never attempted to rescue him after all these years?

Zhao Yuanji wasn’t entirely sure either. He simply advised Lin Xun to be patient and wait for Ao Xingtang’s return. Only then would they know the answer.

With that, the two began discussing everything that had happened over the past ten years, and both couldn’t help but sigh with emotion at how much had changed.

It turned out that after Zhao Yuanji, his wife, and the golden cicada youth left the Blood Kill Battlefield in Mulberry Woodland, they made their way to the Chaos Star Field within the Ancient Nebula Road.

At the time, the golden cicada youth, Chen Linkong, the white cicada, and other formidable figures from the Ancient Wasteland Alliance had gone into hiding there.

It wasn’t until much later, upon learning that the Thousand Dragon Celestial Assembly was about to commence, that Zhao Yuanji and his wife set off for the True Dragon World.

After hearing about Lin Xun’s experiences over the past ten years, Zhao Yuanji couldn’t help but be stunned, his gaze flickering with astonishment.

He had stirred chaos in Kunlun, rampaged through the Ancient Nebula Road, set off a storm in the Primordial Chaos World, slaughtered formidable characters in the Ancient Immortal Forbidden Zone, traversed the depths of the Ancient Nebula Underworld, and ascended to the Supreme Emperor Stage in the Nirvana of Transcendence...

Although Lin Xun spoke succinctly and indifferently, Zhao Yuanji's emotions surged like a storm, as if he was listening to the making of a legend!

Zhao Yuanji's expression suddenly turned strangely complex when he learned about Lin Xun's purpose of coming to the True Dragon World. He stared at Lin Xun intently, making Lin Xun feel uneasy.

"Uncle, is there something wrong?" Lin Xun couldn't help but ask, shifting slightly under that scrutinizing look.

Zhao Yuanji suddenly burst into laughter and pointed at Lin Xun. "So you went and got my daughter pregnant without a word!"

His laughter was loud and unrestrained, but there was an undeniable mix of emotions behind it—anger, relief, and a trace of displeasure. This was probably the kind of complicated feeling only a father could have. It was as if the precious cabbage he had carefully nurtured for years had been stolen away without him even realizing.

No matter how thick-skinned Lin Xun was, he still felt a little...embarrassed when facing his future 'father-in-law.'

"Alright, it's not that I disapprove of you two being together. On the contrary, you've known each other since you were young and have endured countless trials side by side. It hasn't been easy for either of you to come this far." Zhao Yuanji patted Lin Xun on the shoulder before continuing, "I also trust that you would never hurt Jingxuan, but..."

"Uncle, but what?"

Zhao Yuanji let out a sigh and said, "What worries me is that as you continue advancing on your cultivation path, the gap between you and Jingxuan will only grow wider. When that time comes, will...you still be able to walk this path together?"

The path of cultivation was long and ever-changing. As one's strength and cultivation grew, so too did the distance between past friendships and bonds.

For example, Ning Meng, Shi Yu, and Ye Xiaoqi...they were once Lin Xun's closest friends. Ever since he had left the lower domain, they had not been able to meet up.

For example, Toady, A'lu, and the big black bird, once his inseparable companions...now their whereabouts were unknown.

This was the path of the great dao. The higher one climbed, the further one drifted from those left behind...

This was Zhao Yuanji's concern.

Given Lin Xun's foundation and cultivation, he was destined to continue to advance rapidly on the path of the great dao. However, when that time came, could Zhao Jingxuan keep up with him?

It seemed highly unlikely!

Almost impossible!

Lin Xun pondered for a moment then reassured in a serious tone, "No matter what happens, I will not abandon Jingxuan. Otherwise, what would be the point of pursuing the great dao?"

Zhao Yuanji studied Lin Xun intently before nodding, "I believe you."

Lin Xun's expression remained calm and he didn't offer empty promises or oaths, because deep down in his heart, he had never once considered the possibility of letting Zhao Jingxuan down.

While the two were talking, Lin Xun also did not forget to communicate with Xi, Big Yellow, and Xia Zhi in the Dao Endless Pagoda. He prepared a variety of divine herbs and elixirs to aid in their healing.

Xia Zhi wasn't injured, but both Xi and Big Yellow were critically wounded and their recovery seemed unlikely in the short term.

This weighed heavily on Lin Xun's mind.

The terrifying youthful looking man, who was able to manipulate the law power of the Dragon Palace world was no different from Heavenly Emperor Shi.

In this situation, how could they break into the Dragon Palace and rescue Jingxuan?

Seeing Lin Xun frown, Zhao Yuanji couldn't help but ask. As he learned about Lin Xun's previous bloody battles in the Dragon Palace, his own brows gradually furrowed.

"The Ancestor Soul Slaying you mentioned should be the ninth ancestor of our clan, Ao Jiuyi, also known as Soul Slaying Dragon Emperor. He is also the only ancestor-level figure present in the clan now."

Suddenly, a soft, melodious voice echoed through the deep, inky sea, and a beam of light appeared from the distant depths. As the light grew closer, it revealed a slender, graceful figure bathed in its glow.

She wore a simple, wide-sleeved light purple palace gown. Her long hair was elegantly tied in a bun, exposing her smooth, snow-white neck. Her face was dignified and beautiful, and every movement she made radiated a refined and noble elegance.

That beautiful face bore a striking resemblance to Zhao Jingxuan, with a seventy percent likeness. It was none other than Ao Xingtang!

This should be the second time Lin Xun had seen her. The first time was when he was young and attended her birthday banquet in the Forbidden City of Ziyao Empire.

It was also at that banquet that Liu Qingyan composed the Heaven Pride Song.

And now, after many years, they met again, but Lin Xun was no longer the young teenager he once was. He had become a supreme Emperor, his name resounding throughout the starry sky!

“Greetings Auntie.” Lin Xun bowed respectfully.

No matter how high his cultivation level was, he would always remain a junior to Zhao Yuanji and Ao Xingtang.

“We’re a family, no need for such formality.” Ao Xingtang said with a gentle smile, her gaze scanning Lin Xun from head to toe, like a mother-in law evaluating her son-in-law.

She nodded with satisfaction after a moment. “Jingxuan has sharp eyes, better than mine back then.”

Zhao Yuanji, who stood nearby, coughed awkwardly and remarked, “Xingtang, what are you saying? Are you implying you fell for me because your eyes weren’t sharp enough?”

Ao Xingtang chuckled, “Isn’t that the only reason?”

Zhao Yuanji opened his mouth as if to argue, but Ao Xingtang cut him off, “Let’s not bring up our past in order to not ruin your image in this child’s eyes.”

As Lin Xun listened to the couple’s bicker, he couldn’t help but act confused, pretending he hadn’t heard a thing. In truth, he found it a bit odd. He had never imagined someone like Zhao Yuanji could appear slightly...intimidated.

When Ao Xingtang came over, she held a radiant bead in her hand, which emitted a cascade of light, dispelling the surrounding darkness and chill of the sea.

Zhao Yuanji first briefed Ao Xingtang on Lin Xun's situation and then added, "Lin Xun still has many questions, and only you can provide the answers he seeks."

Ao Xingtang nodded, then turned to Lin Xun. "You came at the right time. Perhaps you can help me resolve the current predicament. Before we proceed, what is it that you want to know? As long as it is within my knowledge, I will tell you everything."

Lin Xun perked up, and after a thought, he asked the first question.

What kind of terrifying existence was suppressed beneath the East Sea, the place known as the Forbidden Zone of Life?

This was also something that Zhao Yuanji didn't know.

Ao Xingtang didn't hide anything and revealed the truth without reservation.

At the beginning of the primeval era, the progenitors of the Four Great Primordial Clans, True Dragon, White Tiger, Black Tortoise and Celestial Phoenix, relocated from the Ancient Nebula Road, bringing their clans along. After experiencing countless trials and challenges in their search, the True Dragon Lineage finally arrived in this vast world, quickly establishing dominance as outsiders!

From that moment, this world came to be known as the True Dragon World.

However, a catastrophic disaster later befell the True Dragon Lineage, and it was a calamity intricately tied to the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos.

Hearing this, Lin Xun couldn't help but tense up. He knew that the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos was the same clan to which his mother Luo Qingxun belonged.

"The Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos was led by an extraordinary ancestor, known as the Omega Lord. He traversed the starry sky, conquering every world in his path. He entered the four great realms, True Dragon World, White Tiger Sacred Mountain, Black Tortoise Continent, and Celestial Phoenix Nest, and single-handedly defeated the progenitors of the Four Great Primordial Clans, forcing them into submission.

Ao Xingtang spoke softly, "The Omega Lord was a figure of great integrity, with an unrivaled presence. He possessed grand visions and great ambitions. After his victories, he offered guidance to the ancestors of the Four Great Primordial Clans, earning their deep admiration.

"As a result, their submission was not forced but out of genuine respect. They willingly served the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos as their rulers and laid down rules, ensuring that future generations of the Four Great Primordial Clans would remain loyal to the descendants of the Omega Lord."

Lin Xun was both moved and astonished. What kind of transcendent demeanor and grand visions could have impressed the progenitors of the Four Great Primordial Clans so deeply?

“From that moment on, the Four Great Primordial Clans, due to their connection with the Omega Lord, gained access to the route and opportunity to reach the other side of the cosmos. Over countless years, countless experts ventured there, receiving the protection and guidance of the Luo Clan.

“It could be said that the Four Great Primordial Clans owed much of their prosperity to the Luo Clan.

“However, at the end of the primeval era, everything changed, and a great disaster followed.”

At this point, Ao Xingtang looked at Lin Xun and said, “Come to think of it, this matter is also related to your mother, Lu Boya, and your uncle.”

Lin Xun’s heart jolted. He had a faint suspicion, but he didn’t dare to confirm it.

“Your mother and uncle are pure-blooded descendants of the Omega Lord, but due to internal conflicts within the Luo Clan, they escaped long ago and fled across the starry sky, intending to hide in the Ancient Nebula Road.”

Ao Xingtang continued, “During their escape, the ancestor of our clan aided them, helping them successfully escape their pursuers.”

A complicated expression crossed Ao Xingtang’s face. “At that time, among the Four Great Primordial Clans, it was only the ancestor of the True Dragon Lineage who offered assistance. However, this act of aid caused the influential figures of the Luo Clan to mark our ancestor as a traitor.”

Use arrow keys (or A / D) to PREV/NEXT chapter

Chapter 2254 The Bloody and Dark Truth of the Past

The progenitor of the True Dragon Clan, an ancient and terrifying being, was actually branded a traitor by the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos!

Lin Xun could hardly believe it.

“The progenitor of our clan had served the Omega Lord faithfully for countless years and showed unwavering loyalty to the Luo Clan. Yet, because he helped a direct descendant of the Omega Lord, he was branded a traitor and became a target of their wrath.”

Ao Xingtang’s voice was laced with resentment as she continued, “At that time, the Luo Clan presented our ancestor with two choices: either capture Luo Qingxun and the others and atone for his so-called betrayal, or... face the complete annihilation of the True Dragon Lineage!”

Zhao Yuanji couldn’t help but draw a sharp breath. The ruthlessness of the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos was simply beyond belief!

“As you can see, the True Dragon Lineage still exists today and was never wiped out. However, because our progenitor refused to capture Luo Qingxun, he was ultimately suppressed by the Luo Clan.”

Ao Xingtang pointed to the dark, boundless sea. “Do you know why the East Sea is called the Sea of Sins? It’s because the Luo Clan believed that our ancestor’s punishment was the result of his own sins and he deserved to be sealed here for eternity!”

Realization struck Lin Xun and Zhao Yuanji, stirring a whirlwind of emotions within them. It turned out that...the terrifying being sealed nine thousand feet beneath the sea was none other than the progenitor of the True Dragon Lineage!

This was undoubtedly too shocking. If Ao Xingtang hadn’t said it herself, Lin Xun would have thought it was nothing more than an absurd tale.

The True Dragon World was the territory of the True Dragon Clan and the Dragon Palace towered above the East Sea was their ancestral home!

Who could have imagined that their own progenitor had been sealed beneath these very waters?

“Why has no one from the True Dragon Lineage ever come to rescue him over the past countless years?” Zhao Yuanji couldn’t help but wonder.

Ao Xingtang sneered, “Because they didn’t dare. The progenitor’s suppression nearly led to the clan’s annihilation. They barely managed to survive. Who would have the courage to defy the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos and rescue the progenitor sealed nine thousand feet below the sea?”

After a brief pause, she continued, “In short, our clan understood that attempting to rescue the progenitor would bring the risk of our clan’s annihilation. But if we refrained from doing so, we might at least manage to survive.”

Zhao Yuanji sighed, “I see.”

“This matter is a closely guarded secret within our clan, forbidden from being leaked or known by the younger generations because it is too shameful.”

Ao Xingtang said with a deep breath, “After all, the progenitor of our clan was suppressed right under our noses, and yet no one dared to rescue him. If this were to be exposed...the True Dragon Lineage would lose all face and struggle to hold their heads up ever again.

“As for the present True Dragon Lineage, I’m afraid most of the clan members don’t even know that their progenitor is the one suppressed beneath the East Sea!”

Ao Xingtang’s expression darkened, her eyes flickering with suppressed resentment. “How could such a thing be forgotten with time? How could it simply be erased?

“One hundred thousand years ago, when Dragon Emperor Mingluo, who was the patriarch at the time, learned of this secret, he immediately took action!”

Lin Xun gasped at this revelation and couldn’t help but ask, “Dragon Emperor Mingluo, the one who issued the order to massacre all humans in the True Dragon World?”

Ao Xingtang gave a bitter smile, “Child, what you heard is nothing but a rumor. Just listen and you’ll understand.”

Lin Xun nodded.

Ao Xingtang’s expression turned serious as she began recounting the past.

In order to rescue the progenitor, Dragon Emperor Mingluo chose to keep it a secret. He knew very well that if the truth was revealed, it wouldn’t only offend the Luo Clan, but also be intolerable to other influential figures in the True Dragon Lineage. There was immense risk with it.

Therefore, he decided to find a way on his own to secretly rescue the progenitor.

However, he was horrified to discover that the Luo Clan had placed forty-nine Sea Stabilizing Steles in the waters of the East Sea to suppress the progenitor of the True Dragon Lineage.

Each of these steles was infused with a powerful restriction, a force so terrifying that it was almost beyond comprehension.

Not only was it impossible to rescue the ancestor, but even attempting to descend nine thousand feet into the sea could be fatal.

This was why the East Sea was called the Forbidden Zone of Life.

It was not because of the suppressed progenitor of the True Dragon Lineage, but instead because of the forty-nine Sea Stabilizing Steles placed by the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos!

Despite that, Dragon Emperor Mingluo refused to give up, so he came up with a bold plan and traveled to the Ancient Nebula Road, seeking help from Luo Qingxun, who was also from the Luo Clan.

Hard work paid off. During the Dao War of Emperors in the ancient era, Emperor Mingluo Dragon crossed paths with Lu Boya, also known as Array Emperor Lu.

After learning about the matter, Lu Boya agreed without hesitation and accompanied Dragon Emperor Mingluo to the True Dragon World.

Upon hearing this, the questions that had been lingering in Lin Xun's heart finally began to be answered.

Mister Lu had indeed been to the True Dragon World! No wonder he had mastered the Tribulation Dragon Nine Transformations and was so familiar with the Heaven Slaughtering Dao Severing Array of the True Dragon Lineage!

However, Lin Xun did not think that the person who led Mister Lu to the True Dragon World would be Dragon Emperor Mingluo.

“But when Dragon Emperor Mingluo returned to the True Dragon World with Lu Boya, they discovered that, somehow, the news had been leaked. The entire True Dragon Clan knew about his crazy plan to risk everything and to defy the Luo Clan.”

Ao Xingtang continued, “At that time, the True Dragon Clan didn't even allow Dragon Emperor Mingluo a chance to explain himself. A group of old antiques worked together to subdue and imprison him, stripping him of his title as patriarch.

“After a fierce struggle, Dragon Emperor Mingluo sacrificed his own life to create an escape route, ensuring that Lu Boya could leave the True Dragon World alive.”

Although the words were simple, they caused Lin Xun's heart to race. *Back then, Mister Lu had not reached the Emperor Stage and yet he had endured such a great calamity. If not for the protection of Dragon Emperor Mingluo...the consequences would have been unimaginable!*

“It was also then that I was entrusted by Dragon Emperor Mingluo to leave the True Dragon World with Lu Boya and settle down in the lower domain. For countless years, all I have been thinking about is returning to the True Dragon World and avenging Dragon Emperor Mingluo...”

Ao Xingtang's face clouded with sorrow, "What I didn't expect was that upon my return, I found out that not only had he died an unjust death, but he had also been smeared with false accusations and disgrace over the past hundred thousand years!"

"Xingtang, don't be too upset."

Zhao Yuanji gently patted Ao Xingtang's shoulder before turning to Lin Xun, "Dragon Emperor Mingluo is your Aunt's father. All the rumors you heard are false. The order to massacre all humans in this world actually came from Soul Slaying Dragon Emperor."

Soon, Lin Xun understood that after Lu Boya fled the Dragon Palace, Soul Slaying Dragon Emperor, the ninth ancestor of the True Dragon Clan, immediately issued an order to hunt him down across the entire True Dragon World and any humans encountered were to be killed without mercy!

The reason was that Lu Boya had not only uncovered the core secret behind the suppression of the progenitor of the True Dragon Clan, but had also obtained the Tribulation Dragon Nine Transformations from Dragon Emperor Mingluo.

The True Dragon Lineage absolutely could not allow that.

Thus, under the order of Soul Slaying Dragon Emperor, they ruthlessly slaughtered humans across the world, trying to force Lu Boya out of hiding.

In the end, their efforts were in vain.

However, due to the hunt for Lu Boya, the human race in the True Dragon World was nearly wiped out.

Of course, the True Dragon Lineage would never allow themselves to bear the shame of such a heinous act, so they shifted all the blame onto the already fallen Dragon Emperor Mingluo.

For the past one hundred thousand years, the belief that Dragon Emperor Mingluo ordered the massacre of the human race had been deeply ingrained in the minds of all clans. No one knew the bloody and dark truth concealed behind these rumors!

Upon realizing this, Lin Xun felt a chill run down his spine. To avoid angering the Luo Clan, the True Dragon Lineage not only refused to rescue their own progenitor but also prevented anyone else from attempting it.

Even Dragon Emperor Mingluo, the patriarch of the clan, fell at the hands of his own people for defying this!

It was an act of sheer cold-bloodedness and cruelty!

From this, it was clear just how deeply the True Dragon Lineage feared the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos.

This made Lin Xun recall why the purple-clothed woman, Yanxing, had approached the True Dragon Lineage in the first place. She must have known long ago. With her status as a member of the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos, she could easily obtain the Ancestral Dragon Blood from the True Dragon Lineage, and use it to restore the remnant spirit of the Nameless Esteemed Emperor!

“For countless years, Yuanji and I have been hiding in the Ziyao Empire of the lower domain, waiting for the day we could ascend to the Emperor Stage and return to the True Dragon World.”

Ao Xingtang composed herself and continued, “Lu Boya also carried immense guilt over this matter. He believed that if it weren’t for him and Luo Qingxun, our progenitor wouldn’t have suffered such a calamity, and my father, Dragon Emperor Mingluo, wouldn’t have met such a tragic end.

“So, he chose to remain in the Ziyao Empire, founding the Qinglu Academy, establishing the Rune Master Association and personally guiding descendants of the imperial family. He paved the path of cultivation for Yuanji and me, doing everything in his power to repay the kindness of my father and I...

“In truth, Lu Boya never needed to go to such lengths. Our progenitor has always admired and respected the Omega Lord and would never have stood idly by while Luo Qingxun, a direct descendant of the Omega Lord, suffered.

“Moreover, Yuanji and I had already made the decision back then that we would protect Luo Qingxun with everything we had, ensuring she came to no harm.

“Unfortunately, we never anticipated the tragedy of the Lin Clan massacre...”

Ao Xingtang looked at Lin Xun, her gaze filled with guilt and regret, “Thankfully, you survived that disaster. In a way, it is a blessing in disguise.

“After that incident, your parents mysteriously disappeared, and Lu Boya, worried about being targeted by the Luo Clan again, took you to hide in the mine prison...”

Hearing Ao Xingtang recount the past in such a sorrowful tone, Lin Xun couldn’t help but freeze, his mind swirling with emotions like waves crashing against the shore.

Chapter 2255 Deciphering a Sea Stabilizing Stele

As Lin Xun had grown up in the mine prison, he already knew what had happened after Mister Lu hid there.

Similarly, Lin Xun also knew the cause and effect of the tragedy that had occurred on the Mind Cleansing Peak of the Lin Family.

Now, after hearing Ao Xingtang's narration, Lin Xun finally understood some of the things that his mother Luo Qingxun had experienced after escaping from the other side of the cosmos.

She, Mister Lu, and Star Annihilation Battle Emperor had crossed the cosmos and got the help of the True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor along the way to get rid of their pursuers.

Then she arrived at the Xuan Clan, and with the sword of the Xuan Clan's ancestor, she got the help of the Xuan Clan and successfully arrived at the lower domain where the Return Dominion was located!

In short, the past events described by Ao Xingtang were a crucial clue, which connected the past events of long gone years in one go.

Lin Xun finally understood why Mister Lu had instructed him to go to the Ziyao Empire to discover the secrets of his family and past when he left the mine prison.

He also finally understood why Zhao Yuanji and his wife had taken care of him in a special way after arriving in the Forbidden City.

At the same time, Lin Xun also discovered how extraordinary Mister Lu was.

In the primeval era, he had fled from the other side of the cosmos with his mother Luo Qingxun, and in the years that followed, he played many roles.

He was Array Emperor Lu, who had participated in the ancient Dao War of Emperors, the master of the Fog Obscured Alms in the Underworld, the founder of Qinglu Academy and the Rune Master Association of the Ziyao Empire. Furthermore, he had once entered the True Dragon World and obtained the Tribulation Dragon Nine Transformations inheritance from Dragon Emperor Mingluo...

In the past, Lin Xun would never have believed that the old man who raised him up and had such a bad and violent temper would have had so many legendary experiences!

After a long time, Lin Xun woke up from his trip down memory lane. Gazing at Ao Xingtang who looked sad and melancholy, he couldn't help but frown and say, "Aunt, logically speaking, the current patriarch of the True Dragon Clan is your biological older brother and Jingxuan's biological uncle, but why does he hate and despise me so much?"

In fact, he already had the answer in his heart, but he still wanted to ask Ao Xingtang's opinion.

Ao Xingtang's beautiful countenance was uncertain as she revealed a complex expression that encompassed ridicule, hatred, and helplessness. "Back then, before my father died, I planned to tell Ao Huanhai to follow Lu Boya and leave, but instead Ao Huanhai had severed his relationship with my father in front of the whole clan. Even when my father died, he stood far away, watching coldly and indifferently..."

Lin Xun felt a chill in his heart. Ao Huanhai was simply a disgraceful scion!

Taking a deep breath, Ao Xingtang continued, "I know why he did this. He simply wanted to inherit the position of the clan leader after my father's death. You say that Ao Huanhai hates you, so isn't it simple? If possible, he would even kill me, his younger sister, without hesitation!"

Brother and sister had turned against each other, and father and son had become enemies!

Lin Xun never expected that Ao Huanhai would be such a cold-blooded and ruthless character.

He thought about it and couldn't help asking, "So why did Ao Huanhai allow Jingxuan to participate in the Thousand Dragon Celestial Assembly?"

Ao Xingtang said without hesitation, "I know Ao Huanhai's character too well. He did this just to use Jingxuan as bait to make me show up. Soul Slaying Dragon Emperor may also be behind this too."

Lin Xun finally understood things completely.

"Lin Xun, there is one thing I have to remind you."

Ao Xingtang hesitated for a moment, but still said, "Ao Huanhai likely regards the child that you and Jingxuan have created as his sole property, so he will try to keep them in the True Dragon Clan at all costs."

After saying that, she was surprised to see that Lin Xun's expression was calm and there was not much fluctuation.

Lin Xun said, "Aunt, I have already guessed that this would happen. No matter what, since I am here this time, I will definitely not let Jingxuan and our child to be left with the True Dragon Clan again."

He frowned, "Unfortunately, Soul Slaying Dragon Emperor controls the origin law power of the world of the Dragon Palace, so that will be quite hard to deal with."

A strange look flashed in Ao Xingtang's eyes as she said, "Do you know why your uncle and I are here?"

Lin Xun nodded.

Ao Xingtang continued, "Then I might as well tell you that as long as the progenitor of our clan can be rescued, Soul Slaying Dragon Emperor will never be able to control the origin law power of the world of the Dragon Palace again!"

Lin Xun's black eyes suddenly lit up.

Zhao Yuanji also laughed, "Back then, Dragon Emperor Mingluo personally went to the Ancient Nebula Road to find your mother and Lu Boya, hoping to use their hands to break the power that suppressed the True Dragon Progenitor. And now you are stronger than your mother and Lu Boya back then! Furthermore, you also have the blood of the Omega Lord flowing in your veins!"

Ao Xingtang smiled and nodded, "I have been fretting about how to rescue the progenitor. In the past few decades, I have tried many ways to contact him, but I have failed every time."

She raised the bead in her hand that was scattering particles of light rain and said, "Lu Boya gave me these beads back then. It can offset the terrible power of the forty-nine Sea Stabilizing Steles. If you can think of a way to rescue the progenitor of our clan, it will not be difficult for you to rescue Jingxuan."

As she said that, she handed the bead to Lin Xun.

Lin Xun held it in his palm and looked at it carefully. He found that the bead was imprinted with a dense and extremely restrictive power, similar to array flags and array plates, and it was emitting restrictive undulations.

As he concentrated, he could clearly see that the strands of restrictive fluctuations formed a perfect fit with the cold and illusive aura of the dark sea water, creating something that resembled the mutual rotation of yin and yang.

Lin Xun's dark eyes became fascinated, and he began to deduce the dao rune array diagram within this array bead. This small bead actually contained all kinds of mysteries and secrets.

Gradually, Lin Xun's mind was immersed by it, and he didn't feel the passage of time.

Ao Xingtang and Zhao Yuanji looked at each other, and they couldn't help but feel a little bit of hope and expectation.

After seven days, Lin Xun woke up from his medication. There was an unconcealable hint of fatigue on his face, but even more obvious was the joy.

This array bead was definitely from Mister Lu's handiwork. It contained forty-nine forbidden dao rune arrays. Each dao rune array contained eighty-one smaller formations, which had interwoven and echoed each other to form a complete, strict, and dense forbidden array.

Furthermore, its core function was far beyond only helping cultivators go down past nine thousand feet in the sea!

A spark of inspiration hit Lin Xun and he asked, "Aunt, where are the locations of the forty-nine Sea Stabilizing Steles? Do you know?"

Ao Xingtang nodded and then her eyes sparkled, "Do you have a way to crack this problem?"

"I'll only know after trying first," Lin Xun replied.

"Let's go, I'll take you there." Without hesitation, Ao Xingtang immediately took action.

After the time it took to burn a stick of incense...

Under Ao Xingtang's guidance, Lin Xun was at a Sea Stabilizing Stele, which stood tall in the deep sea water.

When Lin Xun had first entered the world of the Dragon Palace, he had also noticed the Sea Stabilizing Steles, but he had only seen the parts that were exposed above the sea water, and there was nothing worth noting.

However, when looking from the bottom of the sea, he found that the Sea Stabilizing Stele that was immersed in the sea was covered with countless mysterious and obscure dao rune patterns. In fact, they were so dense that just a glance would make people's hearts palpitate.

If it weren't for the array bead that Ao Xingtang had given him, he would not be able to offset the terrifying formation fluctuations that were released by the Sea Stabilizing Stele.

According to Lin Xun's understanding, even Emperor Ancestors would be killed by such A terrible formation power!

Furthermore, for countless eons, the progenitor of the True Dragon Clan had been suppressed here by forty-nine Sea Stabilizing Steles. Therefore, it was obvious the type of horrible torture he had endured.

Lin Xun took a deep breath, abandoned any distracting thoughts, and began to concentrate on perceiving and sensing.

What Ao Xingtang had said was right. The dao rune patterns that were engraved on this Sea Stabilizing Stele could indeed be described as supreme, obscure, and mysterious beyond imagination.

After a while, Lin Xun said, "Aunt, leave me one of these beads, and you and uncle should leave first."

He was worried that when he was deducing the dao rune pattern, some changes would occur, which might affect the safety of Ao Xingtang and Zhao Yuanji.

Ao Xingtang and Zhao Yuanji looked at each other and agreed without hesitation. They soon left, leaving Lin Xun alone by himself.

The dark sea water rolled like ink, and the dao rune patterns on the stone stele loomed. They resembled the secret patterns of the gods and demons flickering, revealing the fluctuations of destruction and death.

Lin Xun concentrated with all his might, running the cultivation power of his original body and five clones to help him comprehend and deduce the runes.

Seven days later.

He was exhausted physically and mentally, and his energy had been completely used up, so he sat casually as he swallowed divine medicines and rare treasures until his physical strength and mind were completely restored. He continued to devote himself to deducing the rune patterns on the stele without hesitation.

Strictly speaking, this was the first time that Lin Xun had encountered such a terrifying supreme formation since he had started cultivating. The mysteries imprinted in it were simply vast and complicated beyond measure.

At his current level of cultivation, it was extremely strenuous for him to deduce them, but fortunately, at least there was some progress.

One month later.

Lin Xun had successfully deduced half of the secrets of the restriction on the Sea Stabilizing Stele. During this period, he had to rest and recover three times in total, consuming a lot of divine treasures and medicines.

Two months later.

Lin Xun had already gone down thousands of feet below the sea surface. By now, he had deduced about eighty percent of the secrets to the rune patterns on the Sea Stabilizing Stele!

During this period, Ao Xingtang and Zhao Yuanji had also come to visit Lin Xun. They quickly found that the latter's mind was immersed and focused solely on deducing, so they had left quietly.

Three months later.

"It's done!" Lin Xun woke up from his state of extreme concentration, and a smile appeared on the corner of his lips.

He had finally understood and comprehended all of the secrets of the Sea Stabilizing Stele!

Immediately afterwards, an indescribable fatigue surged over him causing his eyes to go dark, and he almost fell asleep.

He took a deep breath and realized that his long black hair had turned white like frost and snow.

This was a change that occurred when one's energy was utterly exhausted.

Lin Xun didn't think much of it and took out some divine medicine and began swallowing and refining them.

It wasn't until a few days later that his physical and mental condition returned to their peak, and his snow-white hair became as black as ink again.

After looking at the Sea Stabilizing Stele in front of him, Lin Xun managed to resist the urge to break the formation on it immediately. Instead, he turned around and left to find Ao Xingtang and Zhao Yuanji.

"Aunt, where are the other Sea Stabilizing Steles?" Lin Xun asked as soon as he saw Ao Xingtang.

Time was too tight, and he didn't dare to waste any time.

Chapter 2256 The Great Dao is Boundless

Three months passed.

During this period, Ao Xingtang and Zhao Yuanji had been waiting quietly, but in fact they were actually a little nervous.

After all, Lin Xun was their last hope. If even Lin Xun couldn't do it, then they were doomed to never be able to rescue the True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor from being suppressed.

When they heard Lin Xun's declaration, they were both astonished and excited.

"Is it feasible?" Ao Xingtang couldn't help but ask.

Lin Xun nodded with a smile, "Now we can break the restriction on the first stele, but I plan to deduce and crack all the mysteries of the other forty-eight Sea Stabilizing Steles before taking action."

Zhao Yuanji immediately understood, "Yes, that's it. If we act in a hurry now, it will alert the True Dragon Clan and cause trouble."

Ao Xingtang couldn't help but breathe a sigh of relief as she said with a smile, "As long as this problem can be resolved. Come, follow me."

As she spoke, she led the way.

This time, she took Lin Xun on a journey that lasted for ten days and required traveling countless miles.

The reason was that the forty-nine Sea Stabilizing Steles were scattered in different areas and were extremely far apart from each other.

Otherwise, the power of the entire supreme forbidden formation would never be able to affect the space below nine thousand feet of the entire East Sea, which was regarded as the Forbidden Zone of Life by the people.

After identifying the location of each Sea Stabilizing Stele, Lin Xun immediately started to deduce and crack the next one.

With the rich experience he had accumulated during his first attempt, when deciphering the second Sea Stabilizing Stele, Lin Xun was quite familiar with the process. This time, it only took two months for him to understand all of its secrets and mysteries.

Following that, when deducing the secret of the rune patterns on the third Sea Stabilizing Stele, Lin Xun had shortened the time he needed to one and a half months.

When cracking the fourth one, it was shortened to one month...

Not only did his speed increase by leaps and bounds, but Lin Xun's attainments in the art of runes also rose steadily during the process, producing significant transformation and progress.

Nine months later, he had finished deciphering nine of them.

In the following time, Lin Xun's cracking speed continued to increase, but the difference between the time needed began to decrease. Later on, he had reached a steady-state point where he could decipher a Sea Stabilizing Stele within ten days.

This was already amazing!

After one year of this, Lin Xun had finished deducing twelve Sea Stabilizing Steles.

Unfortunately, there were forty-nine Sea Stabilizing Steles in total. If this continued, it would take him at least two years to finish cracking all of them.

Lin Xun was a little worried by this.

A year had already passed. If this was delayed by another two years, who knew what changes would have happened in the world of the Dragon Palace?

Would the trapped Zhao Jingxuan encounter any misfortune?

These were all things that Lin Xun could not predict, but he had to worry about.

"If you can break through in your cultivation, the speed can be improved a little more. In addition, you also could save a lot of time you spend in recovering your physical and mental strength."

From within the Dao Endless Pagoda, Xi gave Lin Xun some advice.

For the past year, Xi and Big Yellow had been cultivating in the pagoda. There was no shortage of divine medicines and rare treasures for healing. By now, their injuries were mostly healed.

In addition, Xi had paid attention to Lin Xun while in there and realized that every seven days or so, he would have to spend about two days recovering because of his great consumption of physical and mental strength while figuring out the steles.

If Lin Xun could break through, his control over the dao would transform. Furthermore, he would have more physical and mental strength to work on deducing, thus saving a lot of unnecessary time.

Sure enough, after listening to Xi's advice, Lin Xun's eyes lit up and he immediately made a decision: It was time to break through!

Although he had simply been deducing and cracking the dao rune patterns on the steles for a whole year, his attainments in the dao had been tempered again and again while he

recovered. As early as half a year ago, he actually had the foundation to shoot for reaching the third realm of the Emperor Stage.

Therefore, for Lin Xun, choosing to break through now was not a difficult prospect.

The only thing that could be considered hard was perhaps that obstacle he would have to traverse for attempting to reach the third realm. It could be incredibly strange and unpredictable.

The road at the Emperor Stage was staggered through nine levels. In addition, there was an obstacle at the third realm, a trial at the sixth realm, and a tribulation at the ninth realm.

At present, Lin Xun was about to break through the threshold of the third realm of the Emperor Stage, so what he had to face was the Emperor Mind Obstacle!

After breaking through this obstacle, the body and mind could all be transformed.

For experts at the third realm, if their bodies were not completely destroyed at death, then their flesh and bones would turn into a world and continue to exist.

Lin Xun now knew that the first realm of the Emperor Stage was Free From Obsessions and the second realm was Formless.

As for the third realm, it was called Boundless!

The dao is boundless!

Upon reaching this level, a cultivator's Emperor World would also present a sense of vastness resembling 'boundless,' which would result in a brand new transformation.

However, the only thing Lin Xun had to consider now was how to break through the Emperor Mind Obstacle!

This test was related to a cultivator's state of mind, which was among the most bizarre and dangerous trials to encounter. If a cultivator made a mistake, they would lose everything. It was definitely not something that can be broken by brute force alone.

Lin Xun remained silent for three days, doing nothing and thinking nothing.

He adjusted his state of mind to the point where it was calm, untainted, steadfast, and as seemingly perfect as a shining full moon in the sky. Then, he stood up, his dark eyes neither sad nor happy.

Only a long and leisurely voice sounded in his heart, *"My heart has no barriers, and this obstacle is nothing to worry about."*

Boom!

Above the East Sea, deep in the infinitely high dome, outside the void that was beyond the notice of all living beings in the world, a strange and unpredictable calamitous aura suddenly gathered.

There were no tribulation clouds, lightning, or earth-shattering terrifying visions, and not even a single living being was alarmed.

Even Zhao Yuanji and Ao Xingtang, who had been waiting under the East Sea, were completely unaware of what was happening.

However, at this moment, endless waves suddenly arose in Lin Xun's mind!

A strange calamitous aura turned into a great karmic hindrance, coming suddenly like lightning. As soon as it appeared, it produced a terrifying power of destruction.

Lin Xun felt his consciousness suddenly blur, and countless bizarre images emerged in his mind. When he was young, he had cried in his cradle, and Mister Lu in front of him had roared with anger and held him tightly in his arms...

During his youth, he was in the mine prison, in the dark, practicing the art of runes all day long, and was repeatedly scolded by Mister Lu...

In Feiyun Village, he had met Xia Zhi by chance...

The scenes of the past were like the scenes he had encountered in reincarnation. They were replayed one by one, incredibly clear and incredibly hard to forget.

Lin Xun's mood also changed with these experiences, whether happy, sad, disappointed, or bitter... Emotions rolled and stirred like a landslide and tsunami.

Later on, all these scenes turned into illusory fragments and dissipated. Those relatives, those friends, those good brothers who had fought side by side, those old friends met on the road, those senior brothers and sisters...

They all disappeared.

It was as if all the emotions and interwoven fetters of the past had already flown away without a trace left behind.

Zhao Jingxuan, Xia Zhi, Xi, Little Silver, Toady, A'lu... those familiar faces all disappeared in his past memories.

In the end, only a vast expanse of darkness remained.

He was alone, standing in the darkness, and was unable to distinguish the way forward. Nor did he know where to retreat.

At the end of the great dao, there was only one person.

Looking around, everything was empty!

Lin Xun couldn't help but have a thought in his mind, was this the dao that he had been looking for?

If so, was all his efforts in the past...worth it?

Worth it?

Not worth it?

Within the depths of his heart, waves were surging and raging, resembling a question he had to answer himself. It was as if the great dao itself was interrogating him.

The darkness was like a silent cage.

In the cage, Lin Xun, who was alone, was silent for a moment, then smiled silently, and murmured with emotion, "Thank you for letting me look back on the ups and downs of my past, recall those familiar people and things... These have all been imprinted with traces of my dao path..."

The past could not be pursued, but all the ups and downs experienced in the past, those people and things known, the love and hate formed by various causes and effects, the worldly affairs and human feelings caused by the fetters... All those bits and pieces had long been a part of his dao path!

If there was no past, how could there be a future?

If one felt regret and sadness and came to a decision to abandon their own dao...what was the difference?

What was transcendence?

What was freedom?

What was eternity?

If everything in the past was regarded as a fetter and cut off, if the past was regarded as a cage and broken completely open, then what was the person's goal in pursuing the dao?

How could a person measure the worthiness of one's dao path?

Lin Xun knew very well that the current situation was a result of his Emperor Mind Obstacle. A single thought might mean the difference between life and death.

However, from the very beginning, Lin Xun had made a choice, so even if his mood was turbulent and his mind was like a wild horse running wild...

He had only one thought: stick to his heart and protect himself!

All I wish for is for it to be worth it.

All I ask for is to have no regrets.

All I remember is my heart.

All I hold is my path.

Even if the sky collapses and the earth breaks, and the world becomes empty, nothing can be changed!

Boom!

In Lin Xun's heart, a little "heart light" emerged from a cage-like darkness. At this moment everything suddenly collapsed, the cage broke, and the darkness retreated.

The sky was full of light, illuminating the road!

Lin Xun put his hands behind his back, and his whole body was boiling with energy. Like smoke rising into the sky, he felt his energy rise step by step, shaking the universe!

On this day, Lin Xun broke through his Emperor Mind Obstacle. A little light in his heart had illuminated the darkness of heaven and earth, breaking through to the third realm of the Emperor Stage and entering the realm of 'the great dao is boundless.'

Free from outside obsessions, formless in the body, and boundless in the heart!

The natural barrier at the third realm Emperor Stage refined a heart free from impurities!

By reaching this state, it also allowed his body, mind, and dao to undergo a completely new transformation.

Nine thousand feet below the surface of the East Sea, Lin Xun sat casually, with billions of rays of auspicious light flowing around him like mystical rain. Ribbons of dao flowed and floated around him, making him resemble a supreme god.

At this moment, he keenly felt the difference within him after undergoing this transformation. Compared with his breakthrough to the second realm, after conquering

the Emperor Mind Obstacle, it was as if his long-accumulated foundation and treasures were all used to improve his dao unprecedentedly!

Chapter 2257 Breaking Action

It took Lin Xun a period of time to adapt to the new realm. He only had one feeling in his heart. After stepping into the Boundless realm, his combat power had more than doubled compared to before!

Within him, his True Self Emperor World was vast, showing a sense of boundlessness and openness, as if it could accommodate endless energy.

Every drop of blood, inch of bones, membranes, and internal organs in his body were like the supporting poles that built up a vast world. With every breath, wind and thunder surged, and all things emerged!

In addition, within his state of mind, his heart was shining, interpreting the light and shadows of a world. This world reflected the mystery of his dao, which was extremely wonderful.

The bigger the heart was, the bigger the world was. That was an indisputable truth!

This was the third realm of the Emperor Stage. The body and mind could all be metamorphosed into a world. Even if Lin Xun died now, his body would be transformed into a real world and continue to exist like that...

After another three days, Lin Xun completely stabilized his dao and did not hesitate to once again devote himself to the action of deciphering the Stabilizing Sea Steles.

The improvement in his cultivation made him much faster when cracking the dao rune arrays, and he had a lot more physical strength than before, which also saved him a lot of time.

However, his consumption of divine materials and medicines increased instead of decreasing.

After all, improving his cultivation also meant he needed to consume an incredibly astonishing amount of resources whenever he wanted to restore his physical and mental strength.

If he had not plundered a large amount of cultivation resources recently and had not seized an astonishing amount of wealth when he broke into the Thousand Dragon Dao Palace, he would not have been able to withstand such consumption.

Time passed.

A year went by in a hurry, and two years had passed since Lin Xun had first entered the East Sea.

"Finally it's possible..."

On this day, Lin Xun was relieved and woke up from the pure concentrated state he was in when he worked on the steles. An unprecedented sense of satisfaction and accomplishment surged in his heart.

Within two years, he had comprehended and solved the forty-nine supreme forbidden dao steles one by one!

It should be noted that for ordinary dao rune founders, comprehending a supreme formation was not an easy task. In addition, in the past two years, Lin Xun had comprehended and thoroughly understood forty-nine different supreme forbidden arrays while also deducing the methods to crack them one by one!

Throughout this, Lin Xun's attainments in the art of runes had been continuously improving and had now reached a level close to perfection.

Now he could easily create a forbidden array that was powerful enough to kill ordinary Emperors

If he had enough divine materials and spent some effort and time, then he could even arrange the complete Heaven Slaughtering Dao Severing array.

This was a terrifying formation that could kill Emperor Ancestors. It was ranked fifth in the heavens and was much more powerful than the Killing Array of Perishment!

"It's been two years. Soul Slaying Dragon Emperor and Ao Huanhai may have forgotten that I exist..."

Lin Xun took a deep breath and went to find Ao Xingtang and Zhao Yuanji immediately.

On the way, he communicated with Xi, Big Yellow, and Xia Zhi who were hiding in the Dao Endless Pagoda. He learned that the injuries Xi and Big Yellow had suffered from back then had already been healed, so he couldn't help but feel relieved.

In the past two years, Xia Zhi had been sleeping. For her, sleeping was a kind of silent cultivation.

"You've grasped all of them already?"

When Ao Xingtang and Zhao Yuanji got the news from Lin Xun, they both found it hard to believe.

Two years!

He had cracked the secrets to the forty-nine supreme forbidden formations that had come from the Luo Clan, a clan from the other side of the cosmos!

This was definitely a miraculous feat!

"Then...can we rescue the progenitor of our clan now?" Ao Xingtang's voice was trembling.

When hope came, she became so excited that she was actually at a bit of a loss.

For countless years, the progenitor of the True Dragon Clan had been suppressed in this dark seabed and suffered countless years under torture.

Even those as powerful as the members of the True Dragon Lineage did not dare to rescue him. Thus, the bottom of the East Sea had become the Forbidden Zone of Life. No one knew that the progenitor of the True Dragon Clan had been trapped here like a prisoner.

In the past few decades, Ao Xingtang had tried countless times to reach him, but all of her attempts had ended in failure, so she was already desperate.

Now, Lin Xun had brought her hope in two years!

Looking at Ao Xingtang's excited and nervous expression, Lin Xun nodded without hesitation.

Suddenly, Ao Xingtang felt as if a tight string had been loosened from her heart. She completely relaxed and indescribable emotions surged into her heart like a volcanic eruption.

She thought of her father who had paid the price of his life for this, and her older brother who had turned against their father. Too many things flickered through her mind...

Zhao Yuanji couldn't help but laugh with emotion, "You are worthy of being my good son-in-law!"

Lin Xun's face became hot. Was this considered approval?

Lin Xun took a deep breath and told them his plan, "Uncle, Aunt, I don't plan on acting right now."

Ao Xingtang was stunned, "Why?"

Lin Xun's dark eyes were deep and he didn't hide his intentions. He said, "I plan to go to the nine imperial clans first and offer them the Tribulation Dragon Nine Transformations in exchange for their real help."

He emphasized the word "real."

Want to change the fate of your clans?

Sure!

But how can you just sit back and enjoy the fruits of other people's labor for free?

He, Lin Xun, was not a saint doing charity. If they wanted to learn the Tribulation Dragon Nine Transformation, then they at least...should pay some corresponding price!

In an instant, Ao Xingtang and Zhao Yuanji understood Lin Xun's plan. Their hearts were churning, realizing that this time, Lin Xun was going to stir up a big fight with the True Dragon Lineage!

Lin Xun gazed at Ao Xingtang, whose stunningly beautiful face had gone through a whole host of expressions. Then, she finally sighed, "Just do it, I won't stop you. The True Dragon Clan... It's time to clean it up!"

At the end, her voice became resolute.

Their progenitor had been imprisoned, yet as members of the clan, no one dared to save him. Furthermore, Dragon Emperor Mingluo had risked his own life to rescue the ancestor, but instead he was killed by his own people!

Such a True Dragon Clan was no longer one of the Four Great Primordial Clans that had once shook the cosmos and was admired by all the clans in the world!

"Thank you for your understanding, Aunt."

Lin Xun was very relieved. Ao Xingtang and Zhao Jingxuan both had the blood of the True Dragon Lineage flowing within them. Even Ao Zhentian was the son of Ao Huanhai.

If Lin Xun fell out with the True Dragon Clan completely, then he would have to care about what these people thought.

"In fact, you have already completely offended the True Dragon Lineage. Everyone can understand why you did this. For a struggle within the clan, bloodshed and death are bound to be inevitable."

Zhao Yuanji continued gently, "Since you have made up your mind, just go for it. Your aunt and I will fully support you."

Lin Xun nodded.

On the same day, he left the deep part of the East Sea.

Two days later, on Jade Rainbow Island, Rainbow Reflection Mountain, Lin Xun appeared quietly and found An Xue and An Zheng.

"Senior, you...are still alive?" The two of them couldn't believe it as they revealed expressions that looked as if they were gazing at a ghost.

Two years ago, the news that Lin Xun had caused a gargantuan commotion in the world of the Dragon Palace had caused a tremor in the world.

One person had slaughtered his way to Thousand Dragon Dao Palace, broken through the taboo formation, and killed seventeen Emperors from the True Dragon Clan...

This was such a bloody and glorious record, so who would not be frightened by this?

After this battle, the True Dragon Lineage, which was like a dominant force, was seriously injured and its foundation was shaken. How could all the clans in the world not be shocked?

In the past, such an astonishing event had never happened!

Furthermore, the death of Lin Xun also made countless clans sigh.

Even the nine great imperial clans couldn't help but feel depressed and heartbroken.

Under such circumstances, it could only be imagined how flabbergasted An Xue and An Zheng would be after suddenly seeing Lin Xun alive again.

Lin Xun didn't waste any time and immediately asked to see the clan leader of the Bi'an Imperial Clan. An Xue didn't dare to neglect his request and went to report in person.

That night, the clan leader of the Bi'an Imperial Clan rushed at full speed from millions of miles away. When he saw Lin Xun alive and well, he was surprised and astonished.

Following that, Lin Xun had a long private chat with the clan leader. Finally, the Bi'an Imperial Clan sent a message to the other eight clan leaders, saying only one thing.

"The time to change the fate of our clans has come. Please come to Jade Rainbow Island to discuss."

One day later.

Without any outsiders noticing, the clan leaders of the eight clans, Pulao, Hornless Ice Dragon, Suanni, Chaofeng, Baxia, Qiuniu, Bixi, and Yazi, had come quietly from all directions and gathered on Jade Rainbow Island.

At first, they still had many doubts in their hearts, but when they saw Lin Xun, they were immediately surprised and happy, as if they were seeing a ray of hope breaking through the night!

That day, Lin Xun and the nine clan leaders had a secret conversation among themselves.

The next morning, Lin Xun set off and left Jade Rainbow Island.

After watching him leave, the nine clan leaders looked at each other and had another three-hour conversation among themselves.

In the end, they chose to believe in Lin Xun. For them, no matter how much they paid, this opportunity to change the fate of their clans could not be missed!

...

In the sea area nine thousand feet below the surface of the East Sea.

After Lin Xun returned, he had a brief conversation with Zhao Yuanji and Ao Xingtang and immediately took action.

On this day, the East Sea was calm, as it was in the past.

However, for the innumerable clans and groups that lived in the True Dragon World, this was destined to be a day that was going to go down in history!

Boom!

Nine thousand feet below the surface of the sea, as Lin Xun took action, in just a moment, the supreme forbidden formation covering a Stabilizing Sea Stele suddenly fell into a stagnant state, and the waves it emitted also subsided.

Ao Xingtang and Zhao Yuanji both keenly noticed that the area nine thousand feet below the East Sea had changed. It was less cold and strange, and no longer gave people a deadly sense of oppression like before.

As Lin Xun moved, the forbidden power that had covered the Stabilizing Sea Steles one after another also stopped working one by one, and the dangerous fluctuations they emitted gradually fell silent.

Until half of the forty-nine Stabilizing Sea Steles were unlocked, the outside world was unaware of the changes in the space nine thousand feet below the East Sea...

However, at this moment, in the depths of the extremely dark seabed, a pair of eyes that were as large as a lake suddenly opened. The eyes themselves were dull and empty, without any emotional fluctuations, and were completely lifeless.

As time passed, a light sparked in the depths of the empty eyes that began to shine...

Use arrow keys (or A / D) to PREV/NEXT chapter

Chapter 2258 A Day to be Remembered for All Time

The moment the eyes in the darkness opened, Ao Xingtang seemed to sense something. Her heart trembled, and she suddenly prostrated. Her voice was unable to conceal her excitement, "Lord Progenitor Ancestor, is that you?"

After a period of silence, a creaky hoarse voice sounded with what seemed like great difficulty, "Tonight... What year is it? Who...are you?"

Ao Xingtang was on the verge of bursting into tears as she whispered, "Lord Progenitor Ancestor, it has been 231,933 years since you have been imprisoned here. I am the daughter of Mingluo and the granddaughter of Ancestor Niefeng!"

There was another period of silence. Finally, in the boundless darkness, a turbulent flow suddenly rolled up, as if a huge creature had awakened in it.

The creaky and hoarse voice sounded again, "Were you the one who lifted the seal of the Luo Family who hails from the other side of the cosmos?"

Immediately, Ao Xingtang told the progenitor the whole story.

Throughout this entire time, Lin Xun had been deactivating the forbidden arrays on the Stabilizing Sea Steles without pausing at all.

However, he had also noticed that, in the depths of the extremely dark sea, there was an extremely terrifying aura awakening.

Undoubtedly, that was the progenitor of the True Dragon Lineage who had been suppressed there for countless years!

...

One day later.

Outside the world of the Dragon Palace.

Woo woo woo~~

A burst of vast horn sounds suddenly sounded from the sea in all directions, shaking the clouds and setting off raging waves on the sea surface. The terrifying murderous aura that swept towards the world of the Dragon Palace was like a hurricane.

Not long after, on the sea surface, treasure ships, warships, and fierce beasts poured out like a flood or tide. There were thousands upon thousands of them, and they were countless.

Upon closer look, the blot that looked like a mighty army was divided into nine camps. They were the experts from the nine great imperial clans such as the Bi'an, Pulao, Hornless Ice Dragon, and Suanni Imperial Clans.

The armies were led by terrifying beings who had set foot into the Emperor Stage. They had united and came fiercely, making the sea area turbulent.

Just that kind of momentum alone was enough to make all the clans in the world despair!

"Quick! Send a group of experts to block the entrances!"

An old monster snarled, shaking the heavens and the earth. From that power alone, the sea water rolled back.

"Remember, the mission of our Pulao Clan is to control the entrances where the Stabilizing Sea Steles are located. No matter what, we must not let anyone escape from the world of the Dragon Palace!"

On the other side, an old antique of the Pulao Imperial Clan gave an order with cold eyes while teeming with murderous intent.

"This time, it is our only chance to change the fate of our clan. Anyone who dares to slack off will be killed without mercy!"

"Action!"

"Surround the world of the Dragon Palace!"

One after another, majestic shouts resounded, stirring the heavens and the earth, like thunder and lightning. The world was plunged into an endless atmosphere of killing and oppression.

Then the experts belonging to the nine imperial clans dispersed in an orderly manner and rushed to the different Stabilizing Sea Steles.

Near each Stabilizing Sea Stele were paths to enter and exit the world of the Dragon Palace.

This time, the nine imperial clans were responsible for blocking the seven main entrances, which with the other ones added up to exactly forty-nine, which was equivalent to completely blocking the outside of the entire world of the Dragon Palace!

In order to obtain the Tribulation Dragon Nine Transformations inheritance, the nine imperial clans had agreed to do this.

Near one of the Stabilizing Sea Steles, a vortex path suddenly appeared, and a group of True Dragon Clan experts walked out of it.

When they saw the army of the Bi'an Imperial Clan that resembled a black cloud covering the sky in the distance, they could not help but be stunned. They almost could not believe their eyes.

What's going on?!

For countless years, who in the True Dragon World dared to come and make trouble?

An old antique of the Bi'an Imperial Clan laughed coldly, "Come on, capture these noble masters of the True Dragon Clan one by one!"

Boom!

The sky turned upside down, and a group of Bi'an experts rushed out murderously, each with fierce expressions.

"Bold! Aren't you afraid of being exterminated?"

Those True Dragon Lineage experts were shocked and angry by this turn of events, so they protested loudly.

For millennia, the True Dragon Clan was like the master of the sky, controlling all the clans in the world. No one dared to disobey their orders, and no one had the guts to go against them.

This was especially true for the nine imperial clans who were considered their most loyal vassals. If they were asked to go east, they would never dare to go west.

Now, one of those clans had sent a large army to attack them, which was simply outrageous!

"Exterminate the clan? Are you really still the same as before?"

"Capture them!"

Contrary to their expectations, the experts of the Bi'an Imperial Clan rushed forward like a flood of evil spirits, and they were not polite when they started to fight. They felt a sense of pleasure as their blood thundered through them.

In the past, they were like servants and subordinates, and they could only endure and obey when they were ordered around by those of the True Dragon Lineage. For countless years, they have suffered from countless instances of being ignored coldly, contemptuous gazes, harsh scolding, and unjust punishments. Endless resentment has accumulated as a result of that.

Now, this bubbling resentment had finally found an outlet and broken out completely.

In a short moment, those experts of the True Dragon Clan were roughly suppressed and captured alive one by one.

At the same time, the shocking changes outside the world of the Dragon Palace had already alarmed the True Dragon Lineage. For a moment, all kinds of uproar, angry shouts, and voices full of disbelief rang out one after another.

"How dare the nine imperial clans join forces to go against us? Who gave them the courage? They are simply tired of living!"

"Quick, report to the elders in the clan!"

"Damn it, how could such a thing happen? Are the nine imperial clans out of their mind? If it weren't for our True Dragon Clan, how could the nine imperial clans still have a foothold?"

"Oh no, the paths from the Dragon Palace are completely blocked!"

...

Various voices rang out as a bunch of different news spread in the world of the Dragon Palace at breakneck speed, causing all of the True Dragon Lineage to be alarmed.

For countless years, their clan had ruled the world and overlooked it like a master, so they have never encountered such a shocking event!

"Heh, it seems that the nine great imperial clans want to be exterminated!" An old antique sneered, not panicking. He obviously did not take the nine imperial clans seriously at all.

Someone else's voice was cold, "Are they resentful that our clan has been restraining and controlling them all this time? These bastards don't even think about who has been supporting them until now!"

Someone frowned and ordered, "If something is out of the norm, then there must be something strange behind it. Go and find out what is going on. Based on my understanding of the nine imperial clans, if they didn't have some kind of support, they would never dare to make such a stupid move to seek death."

While issuing the order, these old monsters of the True Dragon Lineage also set off and gathered towards the Thousand Dragon Dao Palace.

The nine imperial clans had rebelled and led a large army to attack, which was beyond the imagination of all the True Dragon Clan experts.

At the same time, they also realized that if this shocking course of events continued like this, the dignity of the True Dragon Lineage would really be gone!

An old antique with a bad temper gnashed his teeth and roared, "No matter what the reason, these bastards are acting recklessly, so they must be suppressed and slaughtered in the most brutal way. This way we will let all the races in the world know that even the nine great imperial clans will pay the price of blood if they dare to offend the True Dragon Lineage!"

Two years ago, a single Lin Xun had entered the world of the Dragon Palace, which had already caused their True Dragon Clan to suffer a great loss of vitality and face.

Now, the nine, previously most loyal, imperial clans had actually made such a rebellious move!

Did they believe that the True Dragon Lineage was no longer alive?

"Don't worry, the forty-nine paths leading to the outside world are firmly controlled by us. Even if they block and surround the outside, they are destined to be unable to fight their way in."

An old monster looked calm with a cold and indifferent expression as he continued, "I think that we should take this opportunity to get rid of the traitors among us first!"

Traitors among us!

All of a sudden, many old antiques of the True Dragon Clan understood that the so-called traitors among us were those who now served as the elders in the world of the Dragon Palace!

Many of these elders had come from the nine imperial clans!

However, before they could react to that, a panicked voice came from afar, "Ancestor, something bad has happened! That Lin Xun guy has brought a group of experts into the world of the Dragon Palace!"

What?!

All the old antiques gathered in the Thousand Dragon Dao Palace were stunned and almost thought they had heard the report wrong.

Lin Xun...wasn't he killed by Ancestor Soul Slaying two years ago?

"What on earth is going on?!" shouted an old monster, his face grim.

...

While the world of the Dragon Palace was in turmoil and chaos, Lin Xun had taken action. Beside him, Xia Zhi, Xi, Big Yellow, Ao Xingtang, and Zhao Yuanji followed.

This time, Lin Xun could tell that this trip into the world of the Dragon Palace was not like his first time. After all, the restrictive power of the forty-nine Stabilizing Sea Steles had long been lifted, leaving the path in and out of the world of the Dragon Palace without any defense.

"Let's go to Ancestral Dragon Mountain. If Jingxuan is still in the world of the Dragon Palace, then she must be trapped there."

Ao Xingtang led the way first. She was very familiar with the world of the Dragon Palace.

Along the way, some experts were startled and shouted, "How bold, who are you? How dare you break into the True Dragon Clan's territory without permission? Stop right there!"

These experts were all followers and guards, so they were not actually members of the True Dragon Lineage. For Lin Xun and his companions, they were simply not worthy of attention.

Boom!

Lin Xun and the others didn't even glance at them. The terrifying pressure released from their bodies suppressed those experts one by one.

Furthermore, they had already torn through the void and moved away at lightning speed.

Any character they met along the way, as long as they were below the Emperor Stage, had no chance to block or react. They were smashed to the ground as if they were being thrown by a freakish storm.

Some powerful people who watched this scene from afar were trembling with fear, and they were at a loss. There was only one thought in their minds: Today, the world of the Dragon Palace was going to undergo a tremendous change!

"Stop!"

Suddenly, a thunderous roar rang out, and two old Emperors of the True Dragon Clan moved across the void to block, emitting a monstrous power.

However, when they saw Lin Xun's appearance clearly, they were both stunned, as if they had seen a ghost. *Isn't this guy...dead?!*

And when they saw Ao Xingtang who was leading the way for Lin Xun, the two expressions of the old monsters of the True Dragon Clan had completely changed as they screeched, "Why...is it you?!"

Chapter 2259 Quickly Call Ancestor Soul Slaying!

Lin Xun's appearance caused massive shock and disbelief to the Emperors present.

However, Ao Xingtang's return had surprised them more and even caught them off guard. *How could it be her?*

"Ao Yongzhen, Ao Feiheng, you still remember me..."

Ao Xingtang's eyes flashed with undisguised hatred.

Her father, Dragon Emperor Mingluo, had entrusted her to Lu Boya. When they left, Ao Yongzhen, Ao Feiheng, and other True Dragon Lineage experts had launched an extremely cruel pursuit of them.

The hatred that had festered for all those years was like a volcano that had been dormant for many years, erupting in Ao Xingtang's heart.

"Damnit, spread the news quickly!"

Ao Yongzhen was horrified, and together with Ao Feiheng, he wanted to run away and escape without hesitation.

They were not afraid of Ao Xingtang, but instead were frightened of Lin Xun, Xi, Xia Zhi, and Big Yellow!

Two years ago, this group of ruthless people had slaughtered their way to the Thousand Dragon Dao Palace. If it hadn't been for the intervention of Ancestor Soul Slaughter, the consequences would be unimaginable!

Moreover, the news that Lin Xun and his party were alive and that Ao Xingtang had returned were too shocking, making them realize the seriousness of the situation.

Today, the nine imperial clans had begun to rebel, which was very likely related to Lin Xun, Ao Xingtang, and their entire party!

"Why are you running away? After you killed my father, didn't you also want to eradicate me, the remnant of the traitor?"

Ao Xingtang looked cold and did not hesitate to attack.

She seemed to be full of resentment and desperation as she began to fight, which was completely beyond Lin Xun's expectations.

Before long, Lin Xun could empathize with the grief and hatred within Ao Xingtang. When he had first entered Mind Cleansing Peak of the Lin Family in the Forbidden City as a teenager, didn't he also encounter hostility and suppression from the four collateral clans of the Lin Family?

This was an internal fight of the clan, and it was so cruel that there was no room for any mercy!

When Ao Xingtang made her move, Zhao Yuanji also attacked, but Xi was faster than them.

Puff! Puff!

As Xi wielded the Dao Skyless Spear, an unparalleled sharpness swept across, and two people were instantly killed in the void far away. Their bodies and souls had been annihilated.

Zhao Yuanji and his wife were startled by this, and Xi stated in a calm voice, "Time is precious, and we can't waste it on them."

Two third realm Emperors were indeed not worthy of her attention.

"Let's go!"

Ao Xingtang no longer hesitated and led the group straight to the area where Ancestral Dragon Mountain was located.

Along the way, Lin Xun actually saw that as soon as some True Dragon members appeared, many elders from the nine imperial clans came out and overwhelmed the True Dragons like a flood...

"Fellow Daoist Lin, hurry up!"

"Fellow Daoist Lin, we will fight with you today!"

"Fellow Daoist Lin, be careful."

Various voice transmissions echoed in his mind, forcing Lin Xun to admit that in order to change the fate of their clans, the nine imperial clans really did risk everything this time and had dared to truly go against the True Dragon Clan.

"Those who have the dao have many helpers, and those who have lost the dao have few helpers. Just look at the actions of these nine imperial clans, and you can see how bad the old bastards of the True Dragon Lineage have been over the years!" Ao Xingtang sneered coldly.

Not long after, the Thousand Dragon Dao Palace appeared before them. Behind this palace was the majestic and imposing Ancestral Dragon Mountain that stretched and undulated for leagues.

At this time, many old monsters of the True Dragon Lineage were gathered in front of the Thousand Dragon Dao Palace, and heading them was Dragon Emperor Ruoxu.

Two years ago, Xi had smashed apart his body and soul with the Dao Skyless Spear, but did not completely wipe him out. Obviously, he had recovered since then.

"Damn it! It's indeed Lin Xun and his group. That little beast is still alive!"

When they saw Lin Xun and others, old monsters such as Dragon Emperor Ruoxu all had cold expressions on their faces with eyes full of disbelief.

Ancestor Soul Slaying had told them in person that this little beast and his group had died nine thousand feet below the East Sea!

Unfortunately, now it was clear that the other party was not dead!

Subsequently, when they spotted Ao Xingtang beside Lin Xun, old timers such as Dragon Emperor Ruoxu revealed suspicious looks full of gloominess.

"Xingtang, did you bring these enemies in? Don't forget, you are also a member of the True Dragon Clan!" shouted an old antique agitatedly, revealing a snarling countenance.

Ao Xingtang responded coldly, "No, in your eyes, I am the daughter of a traitor who should have died back then, but you probably didn't expect that I, that same daughter of a traitor, would come back alive one day."

Her voice was full of pure hatred!

Boom!

Lin Xun stepped forward, waved his sleeves, and dao light swept out, rushing into the Heaven Slaughtering Dao Severing formation covering the entrance of the Thousand Dragon Dao Palace.

Accompanied by a roar, this forbidden formation that had not stopped Lin Xun from advancing two years ago also exploded, collapsed, and disappeared within seconds.

Suddenly, the Thousand Dragon Dao Palace had nothing defending at all.

Witnessing this scene, Dragon Emperor Ruoxu and other old antiques all felt an icy chill in their hearts. They suddenly realized that after two years, Lin Xun, who they had treated as a little pest in the past, had broken through and become a third realm supreme Emperor.

"Kill!"

Lin Xun didn't bother saying anything. He had been patiently dormant for two years. This time, no matter who it was, they couldn't stop him from rescuing Zhao Jingxuan.

Boom!

He rushed forward, shining like the scorching sun across the sky. He raised his hand and activated the Dao Lifeless Seal, smashing it hard towards the Thousand Dragon Dao Palace in the distance.

From a distance, the Dao Lifeless Seal was like a mountain of gods falling from the sky, destroying the void, and blasting forward with an unparalleled terrifying killing force.

"Break!" screeched an old monster at the seventh realm as they activated a golden divine hammer, hurling it in the air.

This was also a divine ancient Emperor weapon that could shatter stars and suppress the sky.

Despite that, in a flash, the sound of cracking echoed in the air, and the divine hammer directly exploded. It resembled a big sun detonating, and particles of light swept forward like a tide.

On the other hand, the old monster at the seventh realm was smashed by the Dao Lifeless Seal. His body and bones burst, blood and flesh splattered, and he was annihilated with a shrill scream!

This was the power of Dao Lifeless Seal, which was being used by Lin Xun, a third realm Emperor. The power released was beyond imagination.

Whoosh!

Almost at the same time, Xia Zhi wielded her white bone spear that looked as if it was transformed from brilliant starlight. She flashed into the void, and her black clothes fluttered, exuding a cold and murderous aura.

Puff!

An old monster who was about to rush to Lin Xun had not been careful enough, and his defensive power was directly shattered by Xia Zhi's spear. A hole was pierced into the precious armor he was wearing as he was directly speared and forcibly lifted up.

Xia Zhi's spear then shook and retracted.

The old monster's body exploded with a thunderous crash, blood rained down like a waterfall, and then all of it was evaporated by the terrifying war spear's dao light. He had died without even a trace left.

Xi and Big Yellow also went all out, and their power was even more terrifying. The former was like a phantom, interweaving orderly arcs of light as she wielded the Dao Skyless Spear. She fought Dragon Emperor Ruoxu in a dominating manner and revealed her unparalleled style.

The latter, Big Yellow, rushed forward with the Dao Lawless blade as it attacked like crazy. It was domineeringly aggressive as it chopped at anyone it saw and was extremely fierce.

For a time, everything became turbulent, the universe was dim, the sun and the moon were lightless, the sky was disturbed, and the majestic earth collapsed and cracked, rumbling.

The Thousand Dragon Dao Palace, which lost the protection of the Heaven Slaughtering Dao Severing array, was being crushed by the terrifying battle fluctuations, turning into a messy bunch of ruins.

Boom~~

The sound of the dao surged, divine light swept, treasure light flowed, and there were all kinds of roars, making it resemble a battle of the gods at the start of time. It looked as if the world was going to collapse and everything was falling into destruction.

After all, this was a fight between Emperors!

Furthermore, Xi, Big Yellow, Lin Xun, and Xia Zhi were not comparable to ordinary Emperors. They had charged together and slaughtered more than a dozen old monsters of the True Dragon Lineage within moments!

This fierce, swift, and devastating offensive made Zhao Yuanji and Ao Xingtang tremble.

At this time, the two finally realized that the young man who had needed their protection in the Ziyao Empire had now become a terrifying existence that was beyond their reach!

In the distance, many experts of the True Dragon Clan were terrified, their faces pale. They were all below the Emperor Stage, and the strongest was only at the Quasi-Emperor Stage. Not to mention participating in this battle, even if they approached, they would die instantly!

"How could...how could such a disaster happen..." cried out someone in grief.

For thousands of years, the world had respected the True Dragon Clan. They commanded all the races in the world, and no one dared to disobey! This made those of the True Dragon Lineage revered like idols who had absolute majesty!

Even a low-ranking True Dragon cultivator dared to look down on the influential experts of other tribes.

Unfortunately, a catastrophe was erupting now. Old monsters who were basically gods in their minds were being killed left and right.

Who dared to believe this could happen?

Before the members of the True Dragon Lineage could recover from their shock and anger, a cold roar sounded, "Everyone, come together and capture these little worms!"

In the distance, a group of elders from the nine imperial clans moved through the void and suppressed the cultivators of the True Dragon Clan!

This made them all feel desperate and on the brink of collapsing.

In the past, they were the ones who had dominated the world, enslaved all races, lived freely, and no one dared to disobey them.

Now, they were the fish on the chopping board!

Boom—

The area near the Thousand Dragon Dao Palace became more and more turbulent, with blood flowing, thunder roaring, and a scene of violent chaos.

"Quick, go and call Ancestor Soul Slaying—!" shouted Dragon Emperor Ruoxu shrilly. His roars echoed through the nine heavens and ten earths.

Puff!

His voice was still echoing when he was nailed by a spear in mid-air that resembled a world-destroying lightning bolt. Then his corpse burned and turned into endless ashes in an instant.

Xi had acted.

Last time, she had failed to completely destroy Dragon Emperor Ruoxu, which apparently she had taken to heart. This time, she was able to redeem herself.

Clang!

At the same time, the Dao Formless Sword, which had been controlled by Dragon Emperor Ruoxu, suddenly wailed and fell into the void.

Lin Xun, who was fighting in the distance, acted swiftly. He took out the copper block left by the Treasure Refining Origin Furnace in the Kunlun Dominion and used it as a guide to grab the flying weapon through the air.

Whoosh!

The Dao Formless Sword flickered lightly in the void and fell into Lin Xun's palm.

This sword was like an illusion, giving people a mysterious and obscure feeling of being invisible and formless, but the aura emitted by the sword blade was so sharp that it seemed to be able to cut through the sky and destroy the earth!

Chapter 2260 The Power of the Progenitor

Two years ago, Lin Xun had noticed that Dragon Emperor Ruoxu had been wielding the Dao Formless Sword. Unfortunately, at the time, Ancestor Soul Slaying had attacked him unexpectedly, so he failed to seize it.

Now that Ruoxu was dead, the sword was going to belong to Lin Xun in the future.

Among Kunlun's nine Emperor weapons, he was now only missing the Dao Flawless Armor.

After putting away the Dao Formless Sword, Lin Xun re-entered the battle.

In fact, the fight was coming to an end at this moment. There were only a few old monsters stationed in the Thousand Dragon Dao Palace who were still fighting and struggling.

At this moment, someone interjected, "You are all so brave! I let you leave with your lives two years ago. This time, I guarantee that none of you will escape!"

As soon as the cold and murderous voice sounded, the void suddenly became chaotic, and a majestic-looking figure tore through the sky, revealing someone who had the outward appearance of a young teenager.

Soul Slaying Dragon Emperor had appeared, and he was the only remaining ancestor-level figure in the True Dragon Clan today.

Boom!

The world rumbled, undulating like an ocean.

Everyone present gasped, feeling an unprecedented danger, and they all stopped what they were doing as they became alert and on guard.

"Ancestor! You are finally here!"

"The evil beast surnamed Lin and the traitor Ao Xingtang have colluded to destroy the Thousand Dragon Dao Palace of our clan!"

"Please, Ancestor, kill these bastards!"

The few remaining True Dragon Lineage experts who were struggling all revealed expressions of ecstasy and excitement, and their voices were choked with sobs.

Ancestor Soul Slaying glanced around, and his face became extremely gloomy.

The entire world had been broken and had suffered from a devastating destruction. The huge Thousand Dragon Dao Palace had already turned into a giant pile of ruins.

Ancestor Soul Slaying became furious, and a terrifying divine light flashed in his eyes.

"Xingtang, although you have committed an unforgivable crime, you still have the blood of the True Dragon Lineage flowing in you. Is this how you repay your own clan?" His expression was cold, and the aura emanating from him disturbed the wind and clouds, making him resemble an infuriated god.

"I only know that since you have taken charge of the clan, the world of the Dragon Palace has become full of wicked brown nosers. In order to preserve their own lives, they can even cruelly and selfishly abandon the progenitor ancestor!"

Ao Xingtang's expression was cold, and she didn't bother hiding the pure hate flashing in her eyes, "And you are the foe who killed my father!"

Every word was spat out by her, revealing her immense hatred and resentment.

"Foolish! If it weren't for me, the True Dragon Clan would have been destroyed from the mistakes that were made by the progenitor. If I hadn't killed your father, the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos would have regarded the clan as a thorn in their side!"

Ancestor Soul Slaying snorted coldly, and his expression was full of cruelty as he proclaimed, "Why can't you learn from your older brother and think more about the interests of the clan?"

Following that, he sighed lightly, "It's useless to say any of this now. This time... You will die with those bastards!"

Boom!

Ancestor Soul Slaying waved his sleeves, the sky and the earth rolled, and the power of the law of the world roared. In just an instant, this area was completely blocked.

His sleeves fluttered, making him resemble a supreme master. His eyes were dark with fury as he glanced at Lin Xun and others, "I have said that here, I am the heavens! No one can disobey me, and those who disobey must die!"

This was a kind of absolute self-confidence, as if he was the one who controlled the life and death of all present by wielding the heavenly law. His eyes, words, and behavior were full of contempt and ruthlessness.

In fact, what the Ancestor Soul Slaying claimed was not wrong. He who controlled the origin law power of the world of the Dragon Palace was indeed almost the same as the 'heavens' of this world.

However, Lin Xun and his group looked calm. Not a hint of panic could be spotted on their faces, and it was obvious they even had no thoughts or preparations to resist.

Ancestor Soul Slaying was surprised by this. *Have these bastards given up?*

No!

Suddenly, the old dragon frowned and his expression became ugly. This was because he had discovered that the way Lin Xun and the others were gazing at him was as if they were looking at a...clown?!

"Die!" He did not hesitate to act.

Boom!

The unparalleled origin law power turned into a torrent that resembled a landslide and tsunami as it drowned Lin Xun and the others. The aura it exuded was extremely terrifying.

Ancestor Soul Slaying was sure that no one in this world could withstand such a destructive blow!

The next moment, his eyes almost fell out of his head.

Lin Xun and his party were not only safe and sound, but the unparalleled origin power of the world had also suddenly stopped where they were standing and could not move forward.

What's going on?

Ancestor Soul Slaying was about to use the power again, but was surprised to find that no matter how hard he tried, the origin law power of the world of the Dragon Palace would not get closer to Lin Xun and his party!

It was as if the law power was afraid of something...

Ancestor Soul Slaying felt a chill in his heart and realized something was wrong.

At this moment, a hoarse old voice sounded, "A'jiu, I was the most optimistic about you back then, but you have disappointed me..."

A hunched and thin blurred figure then appeared in the void with the heavy aura of the vicissitudes of time emanating from him.

Ancestor Soul Slaying acted as if head been struck by lightning and lost his voice before he finally managed to stutter, "Progenitor Ancestor?!"

The blurry, hunched, and weak looking figure was the True Dragon Progenitor who had been suppressed by the Stabilizing Sea Steles for countless eons!

"Are you surprised? You didn't expect that I could still appear in front of you alive, right?" The True Dragon Progenitor's voice was low and without any emotional fluctuations.

Ancestor Soul Slaying's heart trembled, and his expression fluctuated wildly. He finally understood why Lin Xun, Ao Xingtang, and the others had dared to enter the world of the Dragon Palace again.

After a while, he suddenly pointed at Lin Xun, Ao Xingtang, and the others, roaring angrily, "How dare you destroy the Stabilizing Sea Forbidden Formation left by the Luo Family from the other side of the cosmos... You all deserve to be cut into pieces!"

This was a very absurd situation. The True Dragon Progenitor was the ancestor of Soul Slaying Dragon Emperor, but now he was accusing Lin Xun and others of a crime...yet the so-called crime they had committed was rescuing the True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor!

"A'jiu, you make me more and more disappointed..." The True Dragon Progenitor sighed, as if there was endless regret within him.

Ancestor Soul Slaying's expression flickered, and he gritted his teeth and said, "My Lord Progenitor Ancestor, I also wanted to save our clan. You should know better than me how terrible the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos is. If we had rescued you back then, our clan would have been doomed to be destroyed!"

The True Dragon Progenitor was silent for a moment, and said, "I don't blame you for this matter."

Ancestor Soul Slaying seemed to be secretly relieved, and his eyes flickered as he said, "My Lord Progenitor Ancestor, if you still care about the survival of our clan, please... please return to the nine thousand feet below the Sea of Sin!

"Otherwise, the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos will come sooner or later to trouble our clan. You wouldn't want your descendants to suffer, right?"

Lin Xun and the others were stunned. How could this guy say something that shameless?

Ao Xingtang was so angry that her face turned blue, "Enough, so what you're saying is that, in your heart, the Luo Clan is more important than the life of our progenitor?"

Ancestor Soul Slaying ignored her and only looked at the True Dragon Ancestor.

He then continued, "Lord, it is not like our clan will not have a chance to get rid of being controlled by the Luo Clan in the future. Our clan now has a child with a pure Ancestral Dragon bloodline as well as the innate talent of Grand Abyss Heaven Devourer, and they are about to be born. As long as they are given the opportunity to grow, their achievements in the dao in the future will be destined to surpass all the predecessors of our clan!"

After a pause, he continued, "By then, with that child in charge of our clan, why would we need to fear the Luo Clan?"

Hearing this, Lin Xun almost exploded with anger as he snapped sternly, "Old bastard, when did my child become your clan's?"

"What is the definition of shameless without bounds? I have seen it today!" Big Yellow gritted its teeth in anger. It had never expected that Ancestor Soul Slaying would be such a shameless and audacious character.

"A'jiu, are you done?"

The True Dragon Progenitor was not emotional at all, and his voice became increasingly low.

Ancestor Soul Slaying took a deep breath and said in a deep voice, "Lord, there is only one chance, so I hope you can help our clan!"

Lin Xun and the others all looked at the True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor. The latter was silent for a moment before he suddenly exuded a terrifying aura. His eyes locked on the Ancestor Soul Slaying, and he said while emphasizing every word, "You have really let me down!"

Ancestor Soul Slaying was shocked, and then he revealed a slightly insane expression, "Lord, if I am not mistaken, even though you have been rescued and freed, your cultivation has long been reduced to almost nothing after these countless years of suppression. Instead of doing this, why don't you sacrifice yourself and help the entire clan instead?"

"You deserve to die!"

The True Dragon Progenitor took a step forward, and his hunched and blurred figure suddenly straightened up. At this moment, it seemed as if a terrifying power within him had silently awakened.

"I need to die? Aren't I doing this for the whole clan?"

Ancestor Soul Slaying seemed to have sensed something was off and became completely desperate. "Lord, if you continue to be stubborn, then don't blame me for suppressing you with my own hands!"

Lin Xun and the others were all stunned. How crazy did a person have to be to make such a disgraceful decision?

"Hahaha, Ao Jiuyi, you are truly wonderful! You have really opened my eyes and mind!"

The True Dragon Progenitor raised his head and laughed towards the sky, but that laughter was clearly filled with endless sadness. "I didn't expect it, I really didn't expect it..."

"You forced me to do all this! As long as the clan can continue to survive, I, Ao Jiuyi, will bear the eternal infamy of killing our progenitor ancestor. What's wrong with that? Lord, I'm sorry!"

In a resolute, frantic, and crazed manner, Ancestor Soul Slaying roared, and the origin law power of the world in the sky gathered like a tide as it was controlled by him. It rushed towards the True Dragon Progenitor in the distance.

"You are right. My cultivation has been frittered away..."

The True Dragon Progenitor then continued in a low voice, "But before I die, if I can eradicate you, the cancer eating away at my clan, it will be worth it!"

As his voice sounded, his vague figure solidified little by little, and his aura rose and soared.

Once the sound of his voice faded, he resembled a master, regaining all his former majesty, dominating the world and roaring proudly.

As he took a step, the world trembled, and endless light of the law power flew, reflecting his figure as majestic and supreme as it had been in the beginning of the primordial times.

Boom~

The rolling origin law power rolled towards him, but before it could get close, it was crushed by the aura of the True Dragon Progenitor and exploded.

Ancestor Soul Slaying's expression suddenly changed, with a hint of doubt in his eyes, as if he couldn't believe it.

"This world of the Dragon Palace was originally created from my dragon life pearl. Yet A'jiu, you still believe you can control it. You have truly overestimated yourself!"

With a voice full of majesty, the True Dragon Progenitor stretched out his hand and gently grabbed through the air.

Chapter 2261 A Mutual Hostage Situation

Boom!

Dancing pythons of law power shot toward Ancestor Soul Slaying.

He paled under the terrifying energy. Having spent countless years of his cultivation life controlling and utilizing the origin power of this world, how could he not be aware of its power?

"Break!" With a flip of his hand, a dazzling pearl appeared and bloomed with an immeasurable glow that instantly crushed the calamity that was about to approach.

"Disgraceful beast! How dare you refine the World Commanding Pearl for your own gain?! Simply abominable!" True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor was shocked and furious.

The World Commanding Pearl was what he had left for the clan before his passing on. Only the clan leader could borrow its power to manipulate the origin power of the world of the Dragon Palace with ease.

Yet, Ancestor Soul Slaying, who was not the leader of the clan, had refined the pearl into his personal item!

“Only by having full control of this pearl can I make sure that we won’t produce another traitor like Mingluo. My liege, I did this for the sake of our clan,” shrieked Ancestor Soul Slaying.

Rumble!

As the two fought intensely with the same origin power, heaven and earth overturned, everything in-between fell into ruins. It was a scene of pure horror.

Outside the battlefield, Ao Xingtang quickly transmitted, “Lin Xun, you guys go to Ancestral Dragon Mountain first and save Jingxuan. Let me and your uncle handle things here.”

Lin Xun took a deep breath and nodded. “Big Yellow, you stay here.”

Big Yellow froze, seemingly displeased that Lin Xun didn't want to bring it along, but in the end, it dejectedly lowered its head and nodded in agreement.

Without delay, Lin Xun, Xi, and Xia Zhi rushed in the direction of Ancestral Dragon Mountain.

From what Ancestor Soul Slaying had said earlier, Lin Xun concluded that Jingxuan and the child in her womb were still here in this world of the Dragon Palace, and they were most likely at Ancestral Dragon Mountain!

.....

On Ancestral Dragon Mountain.

Ao Huanhai was by the bank of the Dragon Pool, with a frown on his gloomy face. He had also gotten the news that Lin Xun, who should have been dead two years ago, had killed his way into the world of the Dragon Palace with a group of helpers!

This surprised him greatly, but it wasn't enough to make him panic.

However, right at this moment, he acutely sensed a violent rush and clash in the origin power of the Dragon Palace!

His face changed drastically. *What’s going on?*

The purple-clothed woman next to him, Yanxing, suddenly opened her mouth, her eyes gleaming with a cold, ghostly luster.

“If my guess is correct, then the True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor who was imprisoned under the Sea of Sins has broken out and is now battling Ao Jiuyi.”

Ao Huanhai tensed up. He screeched, “Impossible!”

“Impossible?” Yanxing coldly said, “I warned you two years ago that Lin Xun couldn’t have died so easily, but you and Ao Jiuyi refused to believe it.”

Ao Huanhai's expression quickly shifted, and only after a long time did he firmly say, “Hengyu, we cannot afford to wait any longer. Swallow this golden dragon cocoon at once!”

In the Dragon Pool, the golden cocoon glowed with a mysterious and soft light that seemed alive as it generated a rhythmic movement that resembled breathing.

Ao Hengyu was dumbfounded, “Now?”

According to the plan, this cocoon could successfully metamorphose in less than three months. If he used it now and something went wrong...

“Hurry!” bellowed Ao Huanhai, his expression ferocious. Now that the situation had gotten completely out of hand, he had to be decisive.

However, as Ao Hengyu was about to do as he was told, Yanxing sneered, “How can this kind of godly artifact be wasted on trash like you? Scram!”

Boom!

A wave of her hand sent Ao Hengyu flying. He smashed onto a steep rock cliff several thousand feet away and fainted on the spot.

An appalled Ao Huanhai roared in rage, “What do you mean by this?!”

Yanxing was unperturbed. “That child has yet to be truly born into this world, so how can I allow this process to be interrupted?”

“This has nothing to do with you!” Ao Huanhai was livid. “Don't you want the Ancestral Dragon Blood anymore?”

“It does from now,” said Yanxing leisurely, “I might as well tell you that I have intended to take this child away from the very beginning. After all, what has awakened in him is the innate talent of my clan, the Luo Clan. Also, of course I want the Ancestral Dragon Blood. If you dare withhold it from me, then I will kill you.”

Her words were calm, but the ruthlessness in them was chilling.

Ao Huanhai laughed out of utter anger, “Not worried that you might not be able to leave alive?”

Yanxing's eyes flashed with a musing, disdainful look. “Ao Jiuyi, who is in charge of the origin power of this world, is already struggling to save himself. Do you think I have anything to fear now?”

An icy current washed through Ao Huanhai’s heart. His plan had taken decades to hatch and would soon come to fruition, only for the harvest to be reaped by another?

Whoosh!

Yanxing suddenly leaped up, her purple hair flying. Even faster than her was a bronze spear that had shot out from her hand, tearing through the air as it went for Ao Huanhai.

Any ordinary person would never expect that Yanxing would act so decisively and swiftly.

However, Ao Huanhai was not an ordinary person. He was the patriarch of the True Dragon Clan, an existence who held an invisible reign over the True Dragon World.

In the face of this deadly blow, he did nothing to block it. Instead, he directly charged toward the golden dragon cocoon in the Dragon Pool.

Bang!

The spear hit his back with a heavy sound of collision. His clothes burst open, but a layer of blue treasure armor had stopped it from piercing his flesh.

Yanxing's pupils shrank. Before she could deploy another strike, Ao Huanhai had already arrived in front of the cocoon and pressed his hand on it. He hoarsely shouted, “Attack me again, and I will destroy it!”

As he spoke, blood streaked down from the corner of his lips. His face was as white as a sheet. Even though the treasure armor had saved his life, the power of the Yanxing's blow was so strong that the impact alone had injured him.

Yanxing's eyes were cold, but she didn’t dare to attack again. “Back away from it, and I promise I won't kill you.”

Swish!

While saying that, she grabbed through the air and pulled Ao Hengyu over to her, lifting him by his collar like she was grabbing a chicken.

She said, “Look again, this is your favorite eldest son, the future hope of your True Dragon Clan. Are you not scared that I'll ruin him?”

Ao Huanhai's eyes bulged and became bloodshot. “Don't you dare! I swear I will kill you if you hurt him!”

Two years ago, Lin Xun had captured his various sons and daughters. Since then, their current states had been unknown, leaving only Ao Hengyu by his side. The fact that Ao Hengyu was now being held hostage by Yanxing made him want to go crazy.

Yanxing remained expressionless. “Threats are useless. Whether your son will live depends on your willingness to exchange the cocoon for his life.”

Ao Huanhai was so furious that his teeth clenched tightly, but he eventually endured it and said, “Fine, I agree, but you have to let Hengyu go first!”

Yanxing snorted, “No, you hand over the cocoon first.”

Ao Huanhai trembled in rage, his face distorted. After a long time, he suddenly roared, “Kill him if you have the guts! I already lost multiple children two years ago, so what if one more dies?”

In fact, he knew full well that once he handed her the cocoon, not only Ao Hengyu but also himself would likely lose his life!

Seeing Ao Huanhai so paranoid and ruthless, Yanxing couldn't help but frown.

Right at this moment, a sharp rustling noise came from far away. Lin Xun, Xi, and Xia Zhi had stormed in.

“It's you!” Yanxing recognized Xi at a glance, and her eyes surged with killing intent.

The battle between them in the Ancient Nebula Underworld had been nothing but tragic. In the end, Xi had been rescued by Zhong Qiu, the second heir of Fangchun Mountain, while Yanxing had taken the opportunity to escape.

Yanxing then noticed Lin Xun. Her pupils slightly constricted, “Little thing, we finally meet...”

There was a hint of ruthlessness in her voice.

Next, she saw Xia Zhi and was instantly stunned. What seemed to be jealousy surfaced on her beautiful face.

As though her emotions had gotten out of control, for once, she gritted her teeth. “Damn it, it’s the law power of the grand dao of fate... It was supposed to be mine, little girl, but you took it!”

Lin Xun frowned and glanced at Yanxing, but his attention was quickly drawn by the golden dragon cocoon at the Dragon Pool. In it, he sensed an aura that he couldn’t be more familiar with.

It was Zhao Jingxuan's aura!

“You are Lin Xun? You've come at the right time. Your wife and your child are sealed inside this cocoon, and if you want them alive, then kill this woman!” shouted Ao Huanhai ferociously as he pointed at Yanxing. “Otherwise, I will destroy the cocoon!”

He had just threatened Yanxing with this, and now, he was using it to threaten Lin Xun!

Lin Xun's eyes darkened and became cold as ice. He looked at Ao Hengyu in Yanxing's hand, and suddenly had an idea. “Senior, I’ll leave this woman to you.”

Xi nodded, her expression calm and bland.

“Be careful not to hurt my child!” shouted Ao Huanhai.

Unfortunately, Xi had already attacked. She simply ignored his demand.

Boom!

The Dao Skyless Spear swept horizontally, raising a storm of destructive energy so powerful the Ancestral Dragon Mountain quaked under it.

“You’ve forced my hands!” Yanxing shot Ao Huanhai a glance. Ao Hengyu in her clutch directly exploded into a cloud of blood.

At the same time, the battle spear on her back streaked out with a clang, dispersing endless chaos qi as it parried Xi’s weapon.

Rumble!

The two fought in the void with their spears, staging a scene of cataclysm that threw the whole area into turmoil.

From the Dragon Pool, Ao Huanhai’s utterly mournful scream echoed, “Hengyu!!!”

He had placed high hopes on Ao Hengyu, his eldest legitimate son. Having to watch the latter die right before his eyes was too heavy a blow; it had driven him to the edge of madness.

“It’s too early to mourn. Why don’t you take a look at these little pests?” said Lin Xun who waved his sleeve.

Second Prince Ao Tianyu and a bunch of other dragon princes and princesses appeared, each wearing a disheartened look as Lin Xun’s power firmly imprisoned them.

When they saw Ao Huanhai, they screamed in excitement.

“Father save me!”

“Father, please save us!”

“Father, I don't want to die, I don't want to die...”

Their calls stabbed at Ao Huanhai's heart like a knife. His bloodshot eyes stared dead at Lin Xun, his voice muffled like it was being squeezed out of his chest.

“Release them, or I’ll destroy this cocoon!”

Chapter 2262 Dragon Cocoon’s Shocking Change

Ao Huanhai's palm was pressed tightly on the golden dragon cocoon, his eyes bloodshot and filled with madness.

Lin Xun's gaze was terrifyingly cold.

As a matter of fact, Zhao Jingxuan was still Ao Huanhai’s blood-related niece, but he obviously didn't seem to think so.

He merely regarded the dragon cocoon with Zhao Jingxuan inside of it as hostages, who he used to first threaten him to deal with Yanxing and now to hand over his sons and daughters!

Lin Xun was silent for a moment before he nodded. “Alright, but you must hand me the cocoon while I release them.”

This drew a hideous smile from Ao Huanhai, who thought that he had found Lin Xun’s weakness. He said, “Release my children first, I...”

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Lin Xun threw out two dragon princes before Ao Huanhai could finish speaking, startling the latter.

He immediately realized something and bellowed, “If you dare to use your innate talent, I will destroy this cocoon even if it takes my life!”

Lin Xun narrowed his eyes as he forcibly stopped himself from releasing Time Stopping. Inside, he couldn't help but be astonished. *How did this old fogey know about my innate talent?*

Just now, he had indeed planned to cast Time Stopping during the hostage exchange to suppress the other party in one go.

However, the latter clearly had been watching out for this!

Lin Xun glanced up at Yanxing who was fighting with Xi in the air. It was probably this woman who had leaked his details.

“Let the others go too, now!” shouted Ao Huanhai, getting more and more fearless by the second thinking that he had grasped Lin Xun's weak spot.

Lin Xun said, “I have already released two, which should be enough to show my good faith, you...”

Ao Huanhai sternly cut him off, “Less nonsense and release them! If you keep dawdling, then don't blame me for being impolite!”

He exerted some force from his palm, causing the cocoon to tremble.

Lin Xun took a deep breath and said, “Fine!”

He waved his hand.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

The three princes and two princesses on the ground were swept up and thrown toward Ao Huanhai.

However, Ao Huanhai made no move to release the golden dragon cocoon. Instead, he laughed up at the sky with a chilling expression, “Fool, do you really think that I will let go of...”

Bang!

A dragon prince suddenly exploded to bits. His primordial spirit was also fragmented. He died on the spot.

Ao Huanhai's smile froze on his face. He was so furious that the corners of his eyes almost split. He screeched, “You dare to use underhanded tricks?!”

“You also refused to uphold your end of the bargain, didn’t you?” Lin Xun's eyes were icy. “I'll give you one final chance: hand over the cocoon, and I'll promise your children will be reunited with you alive.”

Ao Huanhai's expression quickly alternated. How could he just willingly bow down like this?

However, when he saw the terror and pleading in the eyes of his children, his heart couldn't help but waver.

A dragon prince knelt down and wailed, “Father, please let Jingxuan go. We don't want to die, none of us want to die...!”

“Trash!” Ao Huanhai's face was livid. “What are you crying for, it’s only death at worst!”

Lin Xun said, “Even ants strive to live, let alone your children. If you still consider Jingxuan your niece, then stop now when it still isn’t too late.”

He then pointed to the distance. “Look at this world of the Dragon Palace again, it's long been plunged into chaos and turmoil, while outside, the nine great imperial clans have laid down a firm blockade.

“As the patriarch of the True Dragon Clan, how can you watch this go down? Would you really rather let your entire lineage perish because of your own selfishness?”

These words were like knives that ruthlessly thrust into Ao Huanhai's heart. His entirety trembled with rage, his expression dreadfully ferocious.

All of a sudden, he laughed at the top of his lungs, his voice hoarse, “Hahahaha, my clan, perish? That’s not possible! Over the course of endless years, many ancestors and the most promising experts of the True Dragon Clan have traveled to the other side of the cosmos to cultivate. Even if the world of the Dragon Palace crumbles today, my clan will not perish! It’s simply impossible!”

BANG!

Another dragon prince exploded to death right before Ao Huanhai’s eyes as soon as he dropped those words. Blood splattered in all directions.

Ao Huanhai instantly looked like he was going berserk as he hysterically roared, “Even if I die, I’ll take your child down with me. You’ll never get to meet them. Enjoy the taste of losing your own child!”

Saying that, a power surged out from his palm!

Boom!

Right at the next moment, the golden dragon cocoon transmitted out a horrifying energy that not only dissolved Ao Huanhai's strike but also sent him staggering back.

No, this isn't good!

Ao Huanhai's expression changed drastically, but before he could take the cocoon under his control again, Lin Xun had already unleashed Time Stopping.

Heaven and earth returned to utter silence. Everything came to a stop, and so did Ao Huanhai's movement.

At the same time, Lin Xun and Xia Zhi, who had been accumulating power, rushed out. Lin Xun was like a domineering god as he pounced at Ao Huanhai.

Xia Zhi, on the other hand, charged toward the golden dragon cocoon!

This all happened in a flash. When Ao Huanhai came to his senses, a broken blade had already arrived with an extremely sharp aura that blanketed him entirely.

At this critical juncture, Ao Huanhai roared. A round, blue light screen suddenly emerged in front of him, flashing with beautiful and mysterious runes.

BOOM!

In an earth-shattering collision, the light screen was shattered into a rain of light, while Ao Huanhai was sent flying viciously. He smashed down several thousand feet away, spraying blood from his mouth and nose and convulsing from head to toe.

However, there was not even a trace of a wound on him!

The clothes on his chest had been shredded, revealing a blue armor that emitted a misty, divine light.

Earlier, Ao Huanhai had used this treasure armor to block Yanxing's sudden attack, which had in turn allowed him to take hostage of the cocoon.

Lin Xun's eyes gleamed coldly as he instantly recognized it to be the Dao Flawless Armor!

Swish!

Not waiting for Ao Huanhai to stand up, Lin Xun stormed over and grabbed at the armor, ripping it off of the old dragon.

Bang!

With one kick, he smashed Ao Huanhai back down as the latter tried to get up, causing his ribs to sink in pieces. Ao Huanhai let out a miserable scream.

Bang bang bang!

Having accumulated a belly full of hatred, how could Lin Xun show mercy? Using both hands and feet, he beat Ao Huanhai black and blue.

In just moments, Ao Huanhai's tendons were all broken, his head was red and swollen, and his skin was ridden with bleeding wounds. He was critically injured.

As Lin Xun was about to beat him to death, a figure appeared out of thin air and said, "Leave him to me."

It was none other than Ao Xingtang!

Lin Xun's brows furrowed, but in the end, he held back. No matter what, Ao Xingtang and Ao Huanhai were siblings after all.

Furthermore, Ao Xingtang was Zhao Jingxuan's mother, Lin Xun's future mother-in-law.

"Xingtang, you came just in time! Quick, kill this little beast!" Ao Huanhai, who had been beaten to the point his consciousness was slipping away, shouted like a madman.

Ao Xingtang coldly said, "I'm here to avenge Father."

Ao Huanhai lifted his bloodstained face with difficulty, his eyes blurring, "Avenge Father?"

A shiver abruptly jolted through him as he seemed to realize something. He shrieked, "Xingtang, I can explain! If I hadn't endured it and laid low back then, then it's very likely that I would have been killed like our father! Please..."

However, Ao Xingtang couldn't bother to listen to him explain. Raising her saber, she casually drew a slash.

Poof!

Ao Huanhai's head flew off. Even in death, his expression was that of shock and disbelief.

"From the moment you severed all ties with Father, you were no longer my big brother..." Ao Xingtang lifted Ao Huanhai's bloody head, her voice despondent.

Back then, when their father, Dragon Emperor Mingluo, had been persecuted by the clan, Ao Huanhai had been the first to accuse him of rebellion.

His own biological son had called him a rebel!

How cruel was this?

After a long time, Ao Xingtang whispered, "I will sprinkle your ashes on his grave, so that the old man can finally rest in peace."

She had killed her brother with her own hands! How was this not the most painful decision for her?

Witnessing everything, Lin Xun was dumbfounded. He finally understood that Ao Xingtang hadn't intervened to spare Ao Huanhai's life, but rather, she had wanted to kill him with her own hands!

"Lin Xun," Xia Zhi called out. "Come here, hurry."

Lin Xun's heart tightened, and he was unable to think about anything else. Flying right over to the Dragon Pool, he saw that the aura of the golden cocoon was weakening over time!

The dao glow on its surface was also dimming.

"Did something happen to Jingxuan?" Lin Xun's heart trembled as he reached out toward the cocoon.

"Don't touch it," rang a coarse voice as the True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor arrived from thin air. Unfortunately, his figure was extremely faint, as if he could collapse at any time.

He, however, didn't seem to care. The moment he appeared, his gaze was fixed on the golden dragon cocoon.

Zhao Yuanji, who came alongside him, transmitted to Lin Xun. "Ancestor Soul Slaying has been imprisoned."

Lin Xun sighed with relief. He turned to the True Dragon Progenitor and asked, "Senior, how is Jingxuan?"

After a brief silence, the latter said, "If you trust me, then stand aside and watch."

Then, he abruptly thrust his hand at the cocoon.

His five fingers were covered in bright, golden dragon scales, emanating dazzling dao light. Lin Xun's face sank slightly when he saw this.

Before he could react, the force of the thrust had entered the cocoon.

Boom!

The next second, the True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor yanked out. His golden claws were now firmly clutching a blurry remnant spirit.

“Let go of me, old worm. Do you have a death wish?!” roared the remnant spirit as it struggled fiercely.

What the!? The bizarre scene caught Lin Xun completely off guard and creeped him out.

Obviously, it was this remnant spirit that had caused the cocoon to weaken just now!

“It's the remnant soul of the previous Nameless Esteemed Emperor!” Big Yellow arrived with an appalled look. “This old bastard really wasn’t completely dead!”

The Nameless Esteemed Emperor!

Lin Xun's heart shook, chills running up and down his spine. The more he thought about it, the more he was scared of what could have happened.

He didn’t even need to use his brain to know that the Nameless Esteemed Emperor’s remnant soul had been trying to erode and take over the body of the child in Jingxuan's womb, thus coming back to life!

Ao Huanhai probably never knew that while under his control, the dragon cocoon had been going through a shocking change inside!

Chapter 2263 The Death of Yanxing

In the air, Xi and Yanxing were still fighting. Their battle was so intense that it seemed to disrupt the sky.

However, upon sensing the spirit of the Nameless Esteemed Emperor after it got pulled out by the True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor, Yanxing's expression slightly changed.

Clang!

After taking on a blow from Xi, she disregarded everything and charged down.

As she did, she swung her spear, and it was not to save the Nameless Esteemed Emperor as the strike was aimed at Xia Zhi!

It was at an unimaginably fast speed at that!

However, Lin Xun, who had been watching out for her, reacted just as quickly.

Swish!

He activated Time Stopping again without any delay, and a vast, radiant energy of time spread out.

Everyone could see Yanxing abruptly halt for an instant mid charge.

It was also in this instant that the Dao Skyless Spear shot out from Xi's hand like a comet, splitting the sky with an unstoppable momentum before it ruthlessly pierced Yanxing from the back.

Poof!

Blood splashed. In pain, Yanxing's purple hair danced wildly, and her beautiful, frosty face was filled with rage and unacceptance.

She looked intently at Lin Xun. "This is Time Stopping, without a doubt. Who would have thought that after you lost your Origin Aeth Artery, you were able to be reborn with something even better, directly awakening the second stage of the Grand Abyss Heaven Devourer!"

As she was shouting this, her entire body seemed to be ablaze, releasing endless purple light that pushed out the Dao Skyless Spear from her back.

The powerful energy startled Lin Xun. *Just how strong is Yanxing's full prowess?*

Even the coordination of Time Stopping and a full-blow strike from Xi hadn't managed to kill her. This was simply horrifying!

"Die!" Yanxing charged toward Xia Zhi once again, this time with an addition of madness and determination.

It was as if killing Xia Zhi was much more important than the Nameless Esteemed Emperor for her!

"Get lost!" Big Yellow rushed over and angrily slashed out the Dao Lawless Blade. It set off a big wave of snow-white blade light strong enough to threaten Emperor Ancestors.

However, Yanxing struck out with her spear.

CLANG—!

Big Yellow along with the Dao Lawless Blade was directly shaken back with a muffled grunt. The dog's face couldn't help but sink. *What terrifying power this woman has!*

Still, Big Yellow's disruption gave Xi an opportunity, which she seized to stab out the Dao Skyless Spear. With a poof, it once again pierced through Yanxing.

However, Yanxing disregarded her injury and fiercely threw her spear.

BOOM!

The void cracked and burst.

Yanxing seemed to have poured her entire life's power into this spear as it generated a might of boundless terror.

One would think they were watching the spear of judgment thrown out by the hand of Heaven!

Xia Zhi did not dodge, for behind her was the golden dragon cocoon. For once, a flame was burning deep in her eyes, as if Yanxing's very existence gave her a deadly threat.

As if they were archenemies by fate!

Lin Xun had also sensed the threat and soon moved in front of Xia Zhi, obviously intending to shield the strike in her stead.

Xia Zhi's heart clenched. She wanted to stop him, but it was already too late.

Right at the critical moment, a figure suddenly appeared in front of Lin Xun.

It was none other than the True Dragon Progenitor!

Pfft!

Yanxing's spear hit. Except, the first to suffer was not the old progenitor, but instead the Nameless Esteemed Emperor who was clutched in his hand.

The destructive force from the spear crushed the remnant spirit, causing the latter to explode.

Immediately following that, the True Dragon Progenitor let out a grunt. The spear had ripped through his already blurry figure, drawing a rain of blood, and kept moving.

Lin Xun exhausted every bit of his strength and deployed the Broken Blade.

Clang!

The collision of the spear and the Broken Blade shook the void around them. The next second, the Broken Blade wailed and got sent flying.

Everyone who saw this was horrified. Yanxing's strike was undoubtedly powerful beyond imagination. It had squashed the remnant spirit of the Nameless Esteemed Emperor, skewered the True Dragon Progenitor, and knocked away Lin Xun's Broken Blade!

Buzz!

The spear had approached. At this distance, it was already impossible for Lin Xun to dodge.

There was a flash of determination in his eyes. He ran his energy to an unprecedented degree.

The frightening potential of a supreme Great Emperor completely erupted.

The Dao Lifeless Seal appeared and blossomed with a heaven-destroying bronze luster.

RUMBLE!

The spear and the seal clashed, unleashing a violent force like a heavenly river breaking its banks. Lin Xun coughed up blood and trembled like a leaf in the wind. His skin split everywhere into bleeding cracks.

However, he used all of his strength to stand firm on the spot, never retreating a step.

Because behind him was Xia Zhi, and behind Xia Zhi was Zhao Jingxuan inside the golden dragon cocoon as well as the child in her womb!

He could not retreat!

Rumble!

The Dao Lifeless Seal was shaken back after a moment of stalemate. Without anything to block its way, the battle spear that gleamed with an icy, murderous aura stabbed Lin Xun's chest.

Seeing this, everyone paled in horror.

However, his chest wasn't split like they had imagined as a layer of blue armor had closely blocked it.

It was the Dao Flawless Armor!

Still, the horrendous power of the strike still heavily wounded Lin Xun upon impact. He coughed up blood nonstop.

In the end, the spear stopped in the air until its energy dissipated and fell to the ground.

Everything took long to describe but had happened extremely fast. The situation had also been extremely dangerous.

“Damn it!” screamed Yanxing with utter unwillingness.

She had let herself be injured twice to execute her strongest strike ever. Yet, it had failed to kill Xia Zhi. How could she just accept this?

Boom!

Xi expressionlessly charged over and stabbed out the Dao Skyless Spear with a thunderous force, shattering Yanxing's already broken body. Blood erupted and flew, only to be evaporated by a powerful dao light the next second.

As Yanxing felt her life slipping away, the madness and unwillingness on her face faded into sadness and despair.

“Endless years of hunting, yet I couldn't get what I wished for... How can I...accept...”

Her voice became lower and lower until her spirit was completely burned to a rain of ashes that dissipated in the air.

The field was dead silent.

The death of Yanxing lifted a weight off everyone's mind, but their hearts were still unable to calm down. That woman was too terrifying. Her cultivation was so powerful to the point it was inconceivable.

If it wasn't for Xi, then Yanxing would have been the one to emerge victorious today!

Meanwhile, the most pitiful death award went to the Nameless Esteemed Emperor's remnant soul, who had been captured by the True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor and ultimately died under the full force of Yanxing's strike. He hadn't been able to utter a scream before being wiped into oblivion.

“Huuu...huuu...” Lin Xun gasped for breath. Two consecutive casts of Time Stopping and being hit hard by the impact of Yanxing's attack had left him seriously wounded.

However, he couldn't care less and turned to the golden dragon cocoon as soon as he could.

The cocoon hadn't dimmed again, but it now gave off a depressing energy of death. Even the miraculous breathing rhythm had become intermittent.

Zhao Yuanji's couple, Xi, and Big Yellow also came over and looked at the golden cocoon in the Dragon Pool with different expressions.

The battle just now had been treacherous and heart-stopping.

Fortunately, Ao Huanhai had died, Yanxing had died, and Ancestor Soul Slaying had been suppressed by the True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor...

The outcome didn't seem too bad.

However, the True Dragon Progenitor had been fatally hurt. His figure had been damaged and worn away to a weak strand of spirit that looked like it could dissolve at any time.

He spoke with great difficulty, his voice feeble, "I am about to die, but it's not a bad deal at all since I got to see your strength and bravery."

"Ancestor!" Ao Xingtang was overcome with grief.

"It is only death, so don't be sad. In fact, after countless moons of being imprisoned, I already wasn't far from death."

The True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor's eyes were clear and calm. "Xingtang, you are to be in charge of the World Commanding Pearl from now on."

This simple sentence carried a not-so-simple implication because only the head of the True Dragon Clan could use the World Commanding Pearl!

In other words, the True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor had appointed Ao Xingtang to be the new matriarch.

Ao Xingtang mournfully sobbed, "I'm...I'm scared I might fail your trust, Ancestor."

The True Dragon Progenitor smiled and pointed at Lin Xun. "Don't forget that you have a good son-in-law, and you will also have a wonderful grandchild. With them, it will be enough."

He gazed at the golden dragon cocoon gently and tranquilly. "It's already a rare and precious achievement that the child can awaken the Ancestral Dragon bloodline, but more than that, I wish that he will...become a well-respected, honorable character like the Omega Lord...

"Using this remnant soul of mine to give this child a chance... It's worth it." With a low, loving voice, his illusory figure then turned into a magnificent sprinkle of light.

"Ancestor!" grieved Ao Xingtang.

Immediately following, a dazzling blood-color glow bloomed that was permeated with a pure and sacred primeval aura. Together with the sprinkle of light, they surged into the golden dragon cocoon.

One could see from how the cocoon reacted that it had received boundless vitality. It suddenly blazed like a golden sun. True dragons appeared on its surface, meandering and roaming while bursts of echoing dragon roars stirred the region.

At this instant, all the remaining True Dragon experts scattered in the world of the Dragon Palace welcomed a marvelous tingle in their hearts, as if a supreme power was awakening in them. This sensation drew awe and reverence from the depths of their souls!

When the sprinkle of light and glow of blood vanished in the sky, the golden dragon cocoon turned bright red and emitted a strong rhythm of life from within.

Lin Xun's eyes instantly lit up. The first thing he noticed was that the energy belonging to Zhao Jingxuan in the cocoon had become vigorous!

However, she still showed no signs of waking up, and even the child in her womb hadn't yet been born.

Ao Xingtang took a deep breath to repress her sorrow and said warmly, "Don't worry. This has turned out to be a blessing in disguise for Jingxuan as she has received the Ancestor Blood of our progenitor ancestor. The day she awakens will be the day the child is born."

As a descendant of the True Dragons, no one here knew more about this matter than her.

Lin Xun was instantly at ease. He said, "When I leave the True Dragon World, I want to take the cocoon with me."

Ao Xingtang was stunned. After some silence, she nodded. "Alright."

Getting the answer he wanted, Lin Xun became even more relaxed. Looking around, he saw Xia Zhi quietly standing there alone.

He couldn't help but tense up inside and immediately walked over to her. "What's wrong?"

Xia Zhi looked up, her clear, starry eyes fixed on Lin Xun. "Moving forward, don't stand in front of me again in the face of danger, alright?"

Chapter 2264 The Law of Fate

In Xia Zhi's clear eyes was pure solemnity.

Lin Xun's heart tumbled in a current of indescribable warmth. He said, "Okay, I promise you."

Xia Zhi looked down and whispered, “If you break this promise, I will be very angry.”

Earlier, when she had faced Yanxing’s deadly attack, Lin Xun had stood in front of her and refused to take a step back despite having suffered a critical blow.

This had made her very angry, angry that he could disregard his own life in such a way. Didn't he know how important he was to her?

She was also angry at herself for being so useless that she had let him shield her from danger...

However, she didn't voice these thoughts out loud.

Zhao Yuanji watched Lin Xun and Xia Zhi from a distance and inexplicably sighed inwardly. As an experienced person, how could he not see the special relationship between Lin Xun and Xia Zhi?

It was just that it wasn't his place to say anything in this kind of matter.

After all, he himself had a palace full of wives back in the Ziyao Empire...

Zhao Yuanji turned toward Ao Xingtang and reminded her, “Xingtang, since the world of the Dragon Palace is quite turbulent right now, the most urgent thing is to smooth out the situation and rectify the clan.”

“Indeed.” Ao Xingtang nodded and looked at Lin Xun. “Your injury is quite serious, so you should recuperate here.”

Lin Xun hurriedly said, “Auntie, let Big Yellow help you out.” He kicked Big Yellow, who was lying on the ground playing dead.

The dog was furious. “Kid, are you addicted to ordering me around or something?”

Before Lin Xun could say anything, Ao Xingtang said with a smile, “If you help me, you can pick whatever you want from the spoils of victory. While my clan may be lacking in many things, treasures are not one of them.”

What the True Dragon Clan loved the most was hoarding treasures. This was something that everyone in every world knew.

Big Yellow's eyes instantly lit up. It coughed dryly and put on a profound expression. “Forget it, since you've shown such grace and goodwill in your invitation, I will, reluctantly, accompany you.”

This made the crowd laugh.

Flipping his hand, Lin Xun took out forty-nine array flags. “Use these flags to reactivate the restriction on the Sea Stabilizing Steles. This way, you won’t have to worry about intruders.

“Also, Big Yellow, tell the nine great imperial clans that their troops should withdraw immediately, and that I’ll personally pay their clans a visit in a few days.”

“To think that I, the great and hallowed Roaring Battle Emperor, have been reduced to your errand dog,” Big Yellow complained but still agreed to it.

Wasting no time, Ao Xingtang, Zhao Yuanji, and Big Yellow then left Ancestral Dragon Mountain together.

They also took the remaining True Dragon princes and princesses, who had long fainted from fear during the battle.

“I’m going to take a look as well,” Xi said and left.

Only Lin Xun and Xia Zhi remained at the bank of the Dragon Pool.

Lin Xun’s injuries were quite heavy this time. He sat cross-legged on the ground and took out a variety of precious medicines while asking Xia Zhi, “Any idea why Yanxing tried to kill you above anything else earlier?”

Sitting next to him with her arms hugging her knees, Xia Zhi shook her head. “No idea.”

Lin Xun pondered, “She said you had the power of the grand dao of fate, so I suspect this has something to do with why she was so insistent on killing you. Have you noticed anything about this?”

Given the battle prowess Yanxing had displayed, if she had wanted to escape, then probably no one would have been able to stop her.

However, she would rather risk injury and being killed to go after Xia Zhi. This was too bizarre!

Xia Zhi’s brows slightly furrowed as she sank into thought. “When I was in the Law Extinction Zone, someone had said that my life essence is shrouded by a mysterious power that works similarly to a shackle, and thanks to it, I was able to survive and even metamorphose on the brink of death...

“To me, that mysterious shackle is like a treasure trove that allows my power to develop.”

After a pause, she concluded, “In hindsight, this might be the reason why I like to fight and grow my cultivation between the edge of life and death.”

Lin Xun's pupils contracted as he listened to this. A mysterious shackle on her life essence? Could this be the law power of the grand dao of fate that Yanxing was talking about?

He had to ask, "Who was the person who disclosed that information to you?"

Xia Zhi recalled for a long time before she finally remembered the name. "Chen Lingkong. He also said that the world calls him Burning Immortal." [1]

Lin Xun was shaken. How could he ever forget about this mysterious legend?

Back then, in the Supreme Realm's Burning Immortal World, he had seen with his own eyes a strand of the will left by the other party.

According to Toady, the founding ancestor of the Three-Legged Golden Toad Clan had been merely one of the one hundred and eight generals under Chen Lingkong's command!

Lin Xun asked, "Did he say anything else?"

Xia Zhi shook her head. Other than Lin Xun, she never cared about other people or their matters.

Lin Xun fell into contemplation. From the look of things, the mysterious, shackle-like power in Xia Zhi must have related to the dao of fate in order to explain why it had driven Yanxing out of her mind.

The very word 'fate' sent Lin Xun's heart tumbling. Now that he was a supreme third realm Emperor, how could he not understand how mysterious and terrifying it was?

The power of life was most mysterious and abstract as it was capable of carrying the weight of the almighty dao and prompting cultivators to grow time and time again.

The nature of life was known as fate, which was regarded as the course that a person was destined to go through.

The so-called fortune-telling was to deduce one's fate and probe one's destined course, thereby peeking into their whole life.

However, this art of fortune telling was only applicable to mortals.

In the eyes of cultivators, the power of life was as unfathomable and impenetrable as the heavenly laws. When cultivators diligently sought to transform and break through, they were in fact metamorphosing their own lives into something higher.

It was precisely because of such metamorphoses that made the life of a cultivator full of variables. As such, wanting to deduce their fate and destiny was a very difficult task.

In short, anything that was related to the changes in life could be called the dao of fate.

To cultivators, the dao of fate, like the dao of time, was a supreme dao that was almost ungraspable!

As a result, the fact that a force of fate was sealed inside Xia Zhi was so inconceivable!

Lin Xun himself wielded an innate talent related to time, so he was well aware that it would definitely bring endless troubles if the world knew about the mysterious power inside Xia Zhi.

At this thought, he gazed at Xia Zhi and earnestly warned her, “Do not tell anyone else about this.”

Xia Zhi nodded.

Only then did Lin Xun sigh in relief and focus on repairing his injuries.

Meanwhile, Ao Xingtang had begun a great cleaning operation in the world of the Dragon Palace!

With the World Commanding Pearl in hand, she could now manipulate the origin power of the Dragon Palace. This meant that despite having a lower cultivation than some old relics of the True Dragon Clan, she would still be able to suppress them all.

Big Yellow, on the other hand, dashed out of the world of the Dragon Palace and delivered Lin Xun's message to the nine great imperial clans. After that, it just turned and left, not caring if those troops would retreat as ordered.

Shortly after, Big Yellow waved the flags and activated the restriction on the Sea Stabilizing Steles, once again sealing up the passageway to the world of the Dragon Palace.

“Lin Xun ordered us to withdraw our troops. Does this mean that he’s really trampled through the lair of the True Dragon Clan?”

An endless commotion erupted outside the world of the Dragon Palace. Even the faces of the old timers were filled with shock.

“Definitely so! Hahaha, the True Dragon Lineage finally got served right!” Some laughed up at the sky in ecstasy.

“Simply never before seen! Who ever dared to dream that the True Dragon Clan, who has been reigning supreme for countless years looking down on all other clans, would be trampled under the feet of a young human?” Some were so astounded that they breathed heavily.

“Waaawaaaah! Ancestors watching from heaven, we’ve finally welcomed the opportunity to change the fate of our clan!” Some cried tears of joy, sobbing and choking on their words.

“Go, quickly go and spread the news!” The majority were exuberant and excited as they envisioned the bright future ahead.

A day later, the news quickly circulated along with the return of the nine great imperial clans’ allied forces. It immediately triggered an unprecedented uproar in all communities.

The first reaction of all beings was: No way!

The True Dragon Lineage is like the heavenly lord here, unshakable since time immemorial.

How could it be defeated by a cultivator of the undermost human race?

This is absolutely impossible!

However, as more and more details were made public, the various races around the world went from disbelief to skepticism, and only after a long time did they dare to accept such this kind of history-shaking reality.

Shock, joy, ecstasy...as well as all sorts of discussion ensued like volcano eruption in every nation, city, and clan of the True Dragon World.

However, even after having accepted it, no one dared to take advantage of this storm to cause trouble for the True Dragons or eat away at their territory.

After all, the True Dragon Clan had ruled this world for eons. This had built them up as the inviolable lord in the hearts of all races, and their fear of them had long been imprinted in their bones.

This deep-rooted fearful reverence could not be purged in a short period of time.

As the discussions on this matter continued to spread, Lin Xun’s name was also spreading to every corner, making him as famous and looked up to as the sun.

“The first being to ever defeat the True Dragon Clan in forever is actually from the lowliest human race!”

“Even if we don’t want to admit it, the status of the human race is bound to change from today!”

“Hurry and release all those human slaves! Lin Xun is no different from an overlord now. Should he want to take revenge for the human race, the consequences will be very serious...”

Some of the ancient clans, without fail, made this decision right away.

“Lin Xun... Lin Xun... What a blessing for us humans! There is finally hope!”

“Hahaha, Heaven has eyes, finally giving our human race a turnaround!”

When the small number of territories where many human cultivators lived learned of the news, everyone, regardless of who they were, broke into tears, so emotional that they could hardly contain themselves.

After nearly one hundred thousand years, the iron law that humans were slaves to be forever subjugated had finally been broken!

1. See Chapter 2043 for that encounter between Xia Zhi and Chen Lingkong ❸

Use arrow keys (or A / D) to PREV/NEXT chapter

Chapter 2265 On the Topic of Children and Jealousy

As for the storms and uproars in the outside world, Lin Xun was oblivious to them all.

He was at the bank of the Dragon Pool, fully focused on healing and recuperating.

By now, over two years had passed since he had first entered the True Dragon World.

During this, he had suppressed the Imperial True Hou Clan, crossed the East Sea, obtained the absolute breath water on Jade Rainbow Island, and figured out the mystery of the Tribulation Dragon Nine Transformations.

Afterward, he had snuck into the world of the Dragon Palace, rescued Ao Zhentian from Heavenly Forbidden Mountain, and learned the inside story of the Thousand Dragon Celestial Assembly. Because of this, he had paved a bloody path into the Thousand Dragon Dao Palace...

Nine thousand feet under the East Sea, he had solved the puzzle of the forty-nine Sea Stabilizing Steles and broke through his Emperor Mind Obstacle. This had not only raised his cultivation to the third realm but also advanced his expertise in runes by leaps and bounds...

Finally, he had once again killed his way into the world of the Dragon Palace. The process had been full of twists and turns and perils. The battles had been treacherous and heart-palpitating.

Fortunately, it had all come to an end.

Yanxing was dead, the remnant spirit of the Nameless Esteemed Emperor had also been squashed, and the task entrusted to him by Second Senior Brother could be considered successfully completed.

Moreover, he had gotten to see Zhao Jingxuan, and to Lin Xun, the child in her womb was undoubtedly a heavenly, pleasant surprise.

For once, his heart quickened at the thought that he was going to be a father, from excitement as well as a small amount of indescribable apprehension.

Would it be a boy or a girl? Who would it take after? Would it grow to be beautiful? Questions like these flooded him.

This was probably the state of mind of most first-time fathers.

Xia Zhi quietly sat next to Lin Xun, occasionally looking at the golden dragon cocoon in the Dragon Pool and then at him whose eyes were closed in meditation.

Although he hadn't said anything, she had keenly perceived the subtle change in his mood after he had met this cocoon.

Xia Zhi did not understand this kind of change in emotions, but she knew that Zhao Jingxuan and the child in her belly held an incomparably important position in Lin Xun's heart.

"You like children?" she asked out of the blue, her voice crystal clear.

Lin Xun, who was repairing his injuries, was stunned, and then laughed, "I didn't realize it before, but you only know that...the mood is just different after having a child."

Xia Zhi thought for a moment and asked, "Will you not need me anymore, then?"

The simple question had Lin Xun frozen on the spot. His heart surged with indescribable emotions when it suddenly dawned on him that he had never considered Xia Zhi's feelings.

Was she asking this out of worry that he would no longer love her now that he had Jingxuan and his own child?

Unspeakable guilt welled up in Lin Xun's heart. Looking earnestly and deeply into Xia Zhi's eyes, he said, "The thought of you leaving my world has never crossed my mind."

"Mhm." Xia Zhi said, "As long as you don't drive me away, I will never leave, because..."

Lin Xun inquired, "Because?"

Xia Zhi muttered, "Because leaving you means my world will be nothing but darkness. Existing or dying, it will all seem meaningless."

Lin Xun's heart trembled, and he suddenly recalled the words that Xia Zhi had once said during their youth.

"My world is very small, and it can only accommodate you alone."

"Lin Xun, from the moment I woke up, there had been nothing but darkness in my world until I met you. You brought light to it."

"Moving forward, don't stand in front of me again in the face of danger, alright?"

.....

Lin Xun's heart tossed and turned. He couldn't help but take Xia Zhi in his arms, hold her tightly, and stress, "I, Lin Xun, swear to never let you go. I'd rather die than do so."

Under her hat, a heartfelt, dazzling smile bloomed on Xia Zhi's striking face. Her ethereal, dream-like beauty was capable of eclipsing the world.

She was never the type who needed to be sheltered and cared for. She was stronger than any woman in the world, or else she wouldn't have chosen to fight alone in the Law Extinction Zone.

All her strength, her courage, all her conquests were just for Lin Xun, the man in front of her.

She never cared to talk about these achievements.

She didn't even care about the great dao of this heaven and earth, the mountains, the rivers, and all the beings in this world, for her world held Lin Xun and Lin Xun alone.

Having him was enough.

Suddenly, Xia Zhi whispered, "Lin Xun, I want a child too."

Holding Xia Zhi's delicate frame, Lin Xun stiffened. His face turned into an entertaining broadcast of a variety show while ten thousand horses galloped through his mind.

What's this all of a sudden?!

In his stupor, he lowered his gaze to meet Xia Zhi's sparkling eyes and saw nothing but seriousness in them.

This made his head spin again. *It couldn't be that Xia Zhi was provoked by Jingxuan's condition?*

Xia Zhi then said as her eyes flashed with confusion and doubt, "It's just that, how do I make one? Do I have to find a dragon cocoon like this one as well?"

Her melodious voice, when mismatched with her puzzled expression, was endearingly silly.

Lin Xun was so amused that he burst out laughing. He laughed so hard that he could barely catch his breath by the end of it.

He then understood that Xia Zhi was a blank sheet of paper who had absolutely no clue about that matter between a man and a woman.

"What's so funny?" At some point, Xi had returned. Her graceful figure was enveloped in a rain of light as she walked toward them, making her look like an immortal goddess from fantasy land.

"I told him I want a child. I don't know why he is laughing like this." Xia Zhi frowned.

The atmosphere lurched into a sudden silence. Xi's expression also froze for a moment as though she was caught off guard.

A long while later, she couldn't help but look questioningly at Lin Xun. "Do you not feel ashamed talking to her about such a private topic?"

Lin Xun hurriedly explained with a bitter smile, "I wasn't the one who brought this topic up."

Meanwhile, Xia Zhi had turned to Xi inquiringly. "Big Sister, do you know how to birth a child?"

Xi had lived for who knew many years, but in the face of this question, she still felt her cheeks burning a little. She was rooted to the spot, not knowing how to answer.

Of course she knew, but how could...how could she say it in front of Lin Xun, a man?

Noticing Xi's disorientation, Lin Xun relished inside. This was the first time he had seen this ice-cold, lofty, and mysterious woman acting so awkwardly.

“You’re finding this funny?” Xi's eyes zapped like electricity as she glared at Lin Xun. She couldn't answer Xia Zhi's question, so she could only find a scapegoat to break away from the subject.

Lin Xun suddenly had a bad feeling. He quickly got up and said, “You guys talk, I'm going to check on Big Yellow.”

As soon as he dropped these words, he vanished with a whoosh.

Xia Zhi looked even more bamboozled now. Her limpid eyes were plastered with confusion. “Is birthing a child more complex than the great dao?”

Xi was speechless.

Her face kept burning hotter. She didn’t even need a mirror to know how red her cheeks were right now.

However, seeing the urgent desire to learn in Xia Zhi's eyes, she knew that she must properly explain it to this young girl whose beauty made even her feel pressured.

Indeed, in Xi's eyes, Xia Zhi was still a young girl.

After taking a long time deliberating, a still hesitant Xi clumsily strung her words together, “Xia Zhi, birthing a child is a very private matter that requires...well, how should I put it... You know about Yin and Yang intermingling, and dragon and tiger grappling, right? ”

Xia Zhi said, “I know, but what does that have to do with giving birth? Do you also need to cultivate the dao of Yin and Yang in order to create a child?”

The corner of Xi's lips twitched imperceptibly. Her whole mind was a mess. *This girl... really doesn't know the first thing about it...*

In the following time, Xi used her whole life’s patience and made all kinds of analogies she could think of to explain this matter to Xia Zhi. However, the latter only grew more and more confused the more she listened, seeming to be under the impression that giving birth was a bit too abstract a concept...

In the end, Xi gave up. There was just no way to explain it. At the same time, her resentment for Lin Xun grew to the point she gnashed her teeth.

How could he broach such a private matter to this pure and innocent girl?

Simply a beast in human skin!

“When Miss Jingxuan wakes up from the cocoon, you can ask her.” Xi directly kicked the ball to someone else.

Xia Zhi actually thought this was a great idea. She nodded deeply, her eyes bright, “That’s right, I can just ask Big Sister Jingxuan. Since she’s already pregnant with a child, she definitely knows.”

Xi revealed an odd look. “You’re not jealous of her...? Or envy? Or maybe angry at her?”

Xia Zhi was puzzled. “Jealous? Angry? Not at all. Unless it concerns Lin Xun, no one in this world deserves my anger. Also, what does being jealous mean?”

Xi was dumbfounded again and fell silent.

She finally knew why Xia Zhi was able to accompany Lin Xun until now. It wasn’t that her heart was big enough to tolerate Lin Xun being with other women, but that she...she didn’t understand what love even was!

Xia Zhi asked, “Sister Xi, do you also feel jealous?”

Xi was stunned, then chuckled and calmly said, “There is no man in this world who deserves me getting jealous over.”

“What about Lin Xun?” Xia Zhi didn’t know what jealousy was, so she tried to fathom the idea through exchanging with Xi.

“Him?” Xi snorted out a laugh and joked about it, “Do you think I would get jealous over the little guy I watched growing up with my own eyes?”

Speaking of this, many memories came rushing back and drew a sigh from her heart. She had lived for too long; she had witnessed the growth of Xuan Shangchen, the elegance and intellect of Lu Boya, and also the rise of Lin Xun...

But it seemed that...the only one who she truly regarded highly was Lin Xun.

Recalling the past when he had progressed through the trials in Omega Secret-Realm one by one, Xi fell into a trance.

The current Lin Xun, of course, was no longer a ‘little guy.’ He was an unprecedented supreme Great Emperor who had a unique, horrifying potential on the path of cultivation.

In the eyes of the masses, such an existence more than sufficed to peer down upon the heavens. He was a legend, an almost mythical figure.

With these thoughts in her mind, Xi met Xia Zhi's puzzled gaze and softly said, "You may not understand now, but you certainly will one day. Only those who are truly in love know the taste of jealousy."

"Oh, okay." Xia Zhi seemed to understand something and nothing at the same time.

Xi didn't explain any further. This was not something that could be comprehended through explanation.

Meanwhile, Lin Xun had found Big Yellow.

When the dog saw him, it called out, looking very pleased with itself, "Kid, all you need to do now is beg me, and I will bestow upon you a grand fortune!"

Chapter 2266 Full of Emotion

Big Yellow was in high spirits, its eyes full of complacency like those of a war general on a triumphant return.

Lin Xun immediately knew that this cunning dog had seized a great treasure!

He leisurely said, "Big Yellow, do you still remember my second senior brother's instruction to you when we set out?"

Big Yellow was instantly on guard. "Kid, I'm offering you a grand fortune, yet you're using Master to threaten me? That's foul play! I'm telling you, I won't fall for it!"

Inwardly, the dog was regretting it. Why did I have to bring this up so enthusiastically? Great, now this brat won't let me off the hook.

Lin Xun chortled, "Just give me that fortune you spoke of, and I won't compete with you over the other treasures. But of course, if the fortune isn't to my satisfaction, then I will definitely have a good chat with my second senior brother about this later."

Big Yellow was furious. "You ungrateful meanie!"

An unperturbed Lin Xun was merciless. "Are you giving it to me or not?"

Big Yellow gnashed its teeth, itching to bite Lin Xun, but in the end, it sighed in resignation and took out a treasure.

It was a crystalline jade bottle, inside which wisps of white sand flowed, painting a magnificent, dazzling starry void.

This small jade bottle seemed to hold an entire galaxy!

Lin Xun was surprised. “Clear and turbid soul star sand?”

Big Yellow said smugly, “Correct. A person’s life-bound Emperor weapon can double in strength if refined with this treasure! Of course, the clear and turbid soul star sand is also one of the materials needed to condense the seedling of a Primal Chaos Origin Tree...”

The dog spoke with confidence and enthusiasm, as if showing off a great accomplishment, “Had I not searched every nook and cranny of the Dragon Palace, you would never be able to collect this item in your lifetime.”

Lin Xun put away the jade bottle and smiled cutely, “You searched every nook and cranny of this world? Then I suppose you must have found quite a number of good treasures.”

Big Yellow said vigilantly, “What does this have to do with you? Kid, I already gave you the clear and turbid soul star sand. If you don’t know when to stop, I will flip out!”

Lin Xun let out a long sigh, then cupped his fist with a smile. “When I see my second senior brother again, I’ll make sure to tell him how thankful I am for your gift, Big Yellow.”

How are these the words that a grateful person would say?

He’s clearly planning to tell on me!

How could Big Yellow not hear the implication behind his remark? After baring its teeth and rolling its eyes in disgust, the dog clenched its jaw and threw out a storage bag.

“Here, these are yours. But don’t think you can take another mile just because I gave you an inch this time, or I’ll get angry for real!” While saying this, it winced from the financial pain.

Lin Xun opened the storage bag and gasped after he took a look. In it was a big pile of Emperor-grade treasures and above, each one extraordinary. They covered a wide variety, including materials, pills, exotic resources, and ores...

Their value was simply incalculable!

Did Big Yellow clean out the True Dragon Clan’s treasure trove? How on earth did it scavenge so many impressive treasures...?

Wanting to say something, Lin Xun looked up, only to find out that Big Yellow had long since vanished. Apparently, the dog was worried that he would exploit it again.

Putting away the storage bag, Lin Xun made a mental note. He was now only one Cangwu origin root away from coalescing the seedling of a Primal Chaos Origin Tree!

Of the Four Sacred Trees, he had collected the origin root spirits of Jianmu, Kunwu, and Fusang.

The various divine materials needed, which were the primal chaos soil, the mythical five-colored dirt, the absolute breath water, and the clear and turbid soul star sand, had all been gathered.

Right now, all that was missing was the origin root spirit of the Sacred Cangwu Tree.

Speaking of this, Lin Xun couldn't help but recall a past event.

Back in the Ancient Wasteland Domain, he had attended a Dao Lantern Festival on Cangwu Mountain.

There, he had met the will mark left by Li Xuanwei, as well as a remnant force of the Dao Ruleless Bell.

On top of that, in the Stele Forest, he had fathomed a dao legacy of Star Annihilation Battle Emperor – Star Annihilation Heaven Devourer!

In that competition, the other participants were Yu Lingkong of Longevity Palace, Ji Xingyao, Luo Jia, Zhongli Wuji, Zhuo Kuanglan, Lei Qianjun...

So many years had passed since then, but Lin Xun still felt a wave of emotions as he thought back to the people and events of that time. He would never forget them.

On Cangwu Mountain, there had been an Ancient Dao Lantern Tree. There had also been a dwarf-like, intelligent King-grade herb who claimed to be Cangwu Mountain's one and only spirit and the master of all saints!

The help of this King-grade herb had made it much easier for Lin Xun to leave Cangwu Mountain.

Walking down the memory lane, Lin Xun suddenly wondered if there was a connection between Cangwu Mountain and the Sacred Cangwu Tree.

Lin Xun mused, “I should make a trip back to the Ancient Wasteland Domain when I have the chance.”

.....

Zhao Yuanji and Ao Xingtang spent three days carrying out a thorough and bloody cleaning of the world of the Dragon Palace.

Ao Xingtang executed virtually everyone who had persecuted and played a part in the death of Dragon Emperor Mingluo. As for the clansmen who willingly submitted to her, she showed mercy and took them in as subordinates.

At this point, she had claimed full control of the supreme authority of the entire True Dragon Clan.

Lin Xun was not clear about the details involved, but he knew very well that Ao Xingtang had been left with a total mess, and it was bound to be an incredibly long process for the True Dragon Clan to regain its previous status and power.

After all, too many of their old experts had fallen this time, leaving the clan with only twenty percent of their Emperors!

This was no longer just a great loss of vitality; it had also dealt a heavy blow to their very foundation!

While the couple was busy working hard, Lin Xun left the world of the Dragon Palace alone.

.....

On Jade Rainbow Island.

When Lin Xun appeared, the leaders of the nine great imperial clans had already waited there with anticipation in their eyes.

“Congratulations, Fellow Daoist Lin! You have dominated the True Dragon Lineage and trampled their Dragon Palace under your feet!”

“Since the beginning of time, you are the first and only person who’s capable of crushing the True Dragon Clan!”

“Who in this day and age doesn't know about Fellow Daoist Lin's unmatched elegance?”

An array of congratulations showered Lin Xun as soon as he arrived. The faces of all the clan leaders were brimming with enthusiasm, respect, and awe.

While they might have exaggerated a little with their praises, their awe for Lin Xun was real. An existence that could charge through the Dragon Palace and force the True Dragon Clan to bow down more than deserved anyone’s admiration!

Lin Xun calmly said, “Rest assured that I will keep my word. I will impart to you all the Tribulation Dragon Nine Transformations.”

Hearing this, the clan leaders all inwardly breathed a sigh of relief, their smiles turning even friendlier and warmer.

Lin Xun then made an abrupt turn, "However, there is one thing that I have to remind you all."

The atmosphere in the room suddenly became quiet. The eyes of the imperial clan heads flashed with surprise and suspicion.

Lin Xun said frankly, "From now on, your clans no longer have to attach yourselves to the True Dragon Clan and follow their orders, but if you take advantage of their internal struggle for benefits, then know that I won't be polite to you."

The nine clan leaders were shocked. They looked at each other in dismay.

They had already predicted that after all that turmoil and killing, the True Dragon Clan had fallen to its lowest point. This was undoubtedly the best time to divide and swallow their wealth and territory.

The nine clans had even held secret discussions and come up with various strategies to carry it out!

However, Lin Xun's warning had doused their plan like a pot of cold water on their heads. They struggled to believe their ears.

One of them couldn't help but frown and remind Lin Xun not to be too greedy, "Fellow Daoist Lin, don't tell me you intend to take the whole cake for yourself? Without the help of our clans, the True Dragon Clan wouldn't have lost to you so easily!"

Lin Xun glanced over and recognized the other party to be the chief of the Imperial Suanni Clan.

He chuckled, "You're right, I couldn't have defeated them so quickly without your help, but without me, how would you and your whole clans ever have a chance to turn your fate around? You should be fully aware of the answer to that."

The Suanni Clan's leader wore an ugly expression. "Fellow Daoist Lin, the territory of the True Dragon Clan is spread throughout the entire True Dragon World. I'm afraid that you alone...won't be able to handle it."

The rest of the crowd also gazed at Lin Xun.

According to the initial agreement, they would provide their aid to Lin Xun in exchange for the Tribulation Dragon Nine Transformations. The True Dragon Clan's wealth, power, and territory weren't included in this.

However, the situation was different now that the True Dragon Clan was in its weakest time. It was like a fat and vulnerable prey waiting to be slaughtered. How could the nine great imperial clans not be tempted?

Lin Xun's eyes were fixed on the Suanni Clan's leader for a good moment before he uttered, "You'd better disappear now."

The latter's face reddened, the veins on his forehead popped up as he said heavily, "Fellow Daoist Lin, what do you mean by this? Do you think what I just said is wrong?"

"Scram!" Lin Xun's eyes gleamed coldly as he abruptly got up from his seat. A monstrous killing intent spread from him like a storm and ruthlessly hit the Suanni Clan's chief.

The latter stumbled. His face dropped as he ran his energy to resist. "Lin Xun, do you want to go back on your word!?"

Boom!

Lin Xun's palm slapped out at the chief through the air.

With his current fighting prowess, he was able to kill eighth realm and fight nine realm Emperors. How could the chief of the Suanni Clan, who was only at the seventh realm, possibly block his strike?

With a bang, the latter was sent whirling and fell outside the hall.

The sudden event shocked everyone present.

"Remember that I, Lin Xun, was the one who gave you the opportunity to turn your clans' fate around. I don't need your gratitude, but if you think you can walk all over me and do something you shouldn't, then I won't mind paying your clans a visit as well.

"Even the True Dragon Clan couldn't stop me, much less...you."

Dropping these words, he put down the jade slip that recorded the Tribulation Dragon Nine Transformations art and left straight away.

The crowd's expressions shifted dimly, their hearts full of anger and fear, but ultimately, they all discarded the idea of dividing up the True Dragon Clan's power.

Even a juggernaut like the True Dragon Lineage had been suppressed by Lin Xun, so how could their clans possibly withstand his wrath?

Outside the hall, the chief of the Suanni Clan struggled to get up a mortified look. He just wanted to hide himself in a hole. Now that he had completely sobered up, he couldn't even muster the thought to challenge Lin Xun.

“Well, I guess this is it, everyone. Lin Xun can surely be even more terrifying than the True Dragon Clan. Even if our clans team up, we still...can’t afford to offend him!” someone sighed, as if having completely resigned to this reality.

The rest of the group were full of emotion.

Use arrow keys (or A / D) to PREV/NEXT chapter

Chapter 2267 Thousand Flame Imperial City

It was only much later when Ao Xingtang had consolidated her position as the matriarch of the True Dragon Clan that the nine great imperial clans’ leaders learned that Lin Xun was her son-in-law...

The shock from it had them gawking and gasping nonstop.

From then on, the nine great imperial clans completely extinguished the idea of invading the True Dragon Clan.

For now, those were all future events.

.....

Half a month later, calm had been restored to the world of the Dragon Palace.

The golden dragon cocoon in the Dragon Pool still showed no signs of hatching, but Lin Xun had already planned to leave.

Zhao Yuanji and Ao Xingtang tried to keep him longer, but seeing that he had made up his mind, they stopped persuading him.

In a big hall, Lin Xun informed, “Auntie, if the Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos somehow learns that the True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor broke free, they will not let this be. I’ve fully refined the forty-nine Sea Stabilizing Steles, so it’s now possible to seal off the entrance to the world of the Dragon Palace should you counter danger in the future.”

Ao Xingtang laughed, “If the Luo Clan really comes, there’s nothing they can do about us as long as I have the World Commanding Pearl. But you, have you considered which clan whose passage back you want to borrow from?”

Previously, she had informed Lin Xun that it was no longer possible to return to the Ancient Nebula Road from the True Dragon World, but it was possible with the passages controlled by the Celestial Phoenix, White Tiger, and Black Tortoise Clans.

Lin Xun said, "I would like your advice on this."

Ao Xingtang said, "I suggest you go to the Celestial Phoenix Clan.

"Their progenitor had a tight relationship with the Omega Lord. Over a very long course of time, a great number of the Celestial Phoenix clansmen had married members of the Luo Clan. Many of their descendants even took the surname Luo on birth."

She paused briefly then continued, "But after your mother had met with calamity, the Celestial Phoenix Clan severed its ties with the Luo Clan. It's because their approval is for the lineage of the Omega Lord and not the entire Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos."

Hearing this, Lin Xun suddenly thought of an old acquaintance – Luo Jia!

She was a beautiful woman from the Celestial Phoenix Clan. Back in the Ancient Wasteland Domain, he and Luo Jia hadn't been overly familiar, but could be categorized as friends.

Since she came from the Celestial Phoenix Clan and was surnamed Luo, then according to what Luo Xingtang had revealed, a part of the blood in Luo Jia also belonged to the Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos, just like Lin Xun's case!

Ao Xingtang continued, "But if you take my suggestion and choose the Celestial Phoenix Clan, then it's best that you don't reveal your identity.

"Even though they severed their ties with the faraway Luo Clan, at the end of the day, they didn't come to your mother's aid when she was in trouble. So, if you take the risk of visiting them as Luo Qingxun's son, it might stir up some unexpected problem."

Lin Xun nodded.

Ao Xingtang said, "When you leave, I'll give you a token of my clan so you can show it to them. On account of their good relationship with us, they shouldn't turn you away.

"As for the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans, there's no need to even consider asking them. They have always been very loyal to the Luo Clan. Back then, if our progenitor hadn't stepped in to help, then the progenitors of these two clans would probably have captured your mother and handed her to the pursuers from the Luo Clan."

Lin Xun's eyes narrowed slightly as he had only learned now that there was such a big difference in how the Four Great Primordial Clans treated the Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos.

Ao Xingtang suddenly changed the subject, "I heard from Big Yellow that you still haven't refined your own life-bound Emperor weapon. When you visit the Celestial Phoenix Clan, you can ask the Divine Forge Imperial Clan for help with this.

"In terms of refining tools, this clan is recognized as the best in the world. In the primeval era, its founding ancestor held the title of Blacksmith Emperor."

Lin Xun was already taken aback by the name Divine Forge Imperial Clan!

This alone was already telling how extraordinary they were when it came to refining treasure tools.

After some more time talking, Lin Xun decided it was time to leave.

Before he departed, Ao Xingtang softly advised him, "Now that Jingxuan has obtained the progenitor's Ancestral Blood Power, she can emerge from the cocoon with a new level of power once she completely processes it. Just...treat them well."

Lin Xun had already placed the golden dragon cocoon inside the Dao Endless Pagoda. Upon hearing her words, he nodded without hesitation.

He then couldn't help but ask, "Auntie, can you tell when the cocoon is likely to hatch?"

Ao Xingtang shook her head. "That depends on when Jingxuan and the child can truly awaken. It's impossible to speculate this at all."

Lin Xun nodded. No matter when they would be able to awaken, he would definitely be the first to know as long as the golden dragon cocoon was in his possession.

On that day, Lin Xun placed both Xia Zhi and Big Yellow inside the Dao Endless Pagoda, and having Zhao Yuanji and Ao Xingtang seeing him off, he left the world of the Dragon Palace by himself.

Half a month later.

Following the map given by Ao Xingtang, he found an ancient teleportation array in a spatial secret realm at the East Sea.

As the teleportation array operated, Lin Xun vanished.

.....

The Celestial Phoenix Nest was a vast world shaped like a gigantic nest. Various superimposed spaces and realms were distributed within it.

The master of this world was the Celestial Phoenix Lineage.

In addition to this, like the True Dragon World, the Celestial Phoenix Nest also hosted many clans and races.

Outside of Thousand Water City.

There was a buzz as the void fluctuated. Lin Xun emerged from it, and after a brief survey of the surroundings, he teleported into Thousand Water City.

Four hours later, after finding out all the information he needed, he immediately found a boundary ship that was about to depart for Thousand Flame Imperial City.

After paying the fees and boarding the ship, Lin Xun then acted like an ordinary traveler and didn't encounter any trouble along the way.

Only after settling into his distributed residence did he have time to think about his next move.

This boundary ship was heading towards Thousand Flame Imperial City, in the vicinity of which there was a fold in space, and in this fold was a superimposed realm called the Phoenix World.

Without guidance, no one could find the entrance to the Phoenix World.

However, the Celestial Phoenix Clan was not as lofty as the True Dragon Clan. Most of the time, the clansmen lived in Thousand Flame Imperial City.

This was a magical city built on top of an infinite sea of fire. This fire nurtured all sorts of divine aeth flames, claiming to have up to ten thousand different types of them!

Some of these divine flames were first-class flames birthed by nature, and they had many unimaginable, wonderful uses.

The Divine Forge Imperial Clan had been entrenched in Thousand Flame Imperial City for generations.

The divine smiths of this clan, after countless years in business, had long since built Thousand Flame Imperial City into a place of miracles.

Not only did the city cover an overwhelmingly large area, but it was also protected with all kinds of arrays, giving it the title of 'the hardest city in the world to shake.'

Thousand Flame Imperial City was deservedly the number one city in the Celestial Phoenix World. It welcomed countless cultivators from all over the world on a daily basis.

The boundary ship soon started up and rose into the void.

After much thought, Lin Xun made a decision...

If an opportunity presented itself during this trip, then he would begin crafting his own life-bound Emperor weapon!

Ten days later.

After making dozens of spatial jumps and crossing hundreds of boundary realms, the boundary ship finally arrived at Thousand Flame Imperial City without any danger.

Rumble! Rumble!

The passengers were overcome by thunderous noises, as well as an atmosphere full of air currents so hot that they could boil everything between heaven and earth.

Lin Xun looked down and saw a raging fire ocean spanning across the land, raising billions of fire waves as it undulated. The molten flames illuminated the whole world with a fiery red sheen.

This sea of fire was too vast, almost as if infinite. There was nothing but blazing fire boiling inside. Countless divine aeth flames surged like tidal waves with a magnificent, dazzling glow.

Atop this sea of fire stood a city that resembled a floating continent, which was also so big that the eye could not see the end!

Without a doubt, this was Thousand Flame Imperial City, the number one city in the Celestial Phoenix World, a miracle of a place.

A burst of shocked marvels resounded on the boundary ship. Just like Lin Xun, most of the passengers here were also coming to Thousand Flame Imperial City for the first time.

Shortly after, the ship slowly descended onto an open land in front of the city. The passengers, including Lin Xun, unboarded in a line.

In the surroundings of the lofty city gates, remarkable restrictions were placed to protect the city from the invasion of the sea of fire. Not a hint of the scorching heat could be felt as one walked through them. Instead, it even felt refreshing and comfortable.

Lin Xun could see that the huge stone bricks of the city wall were made of the finest divine materials. The surface was also branded with dense runes that needed no operation

to work. As a result, the wall automatically drew on the essence of the fire ocean to refine the city's defensive strength day and night.

After countless moons of this, the sturdiness of the city itself could compare to that of an Emperor-grade weapon. This coupled with the overlaying arrays made it more than enough to block the attacks of the average Emperor expert.

"The skill of this Divine Forge Imperial Clan is quite something." There was a flash of surprise in Lin Xun's eyes.

He could tell that the Divine Forge Imperial Clan had refined the entire Thousand Flame Imperial City into a treasure!

If someone were to make a scene in the city, they would only need to manipulate the power of the various arrays to create a formidable deterrent. Even Emperors would be doomed to suffer if they got trapped here.

After a quick judgment, Lin Xun withdrew his gaze and walked into the city.

All the streets were spacious, clean, and wide. Buildings of all shapes, sizes, and colors lined up on the sides, expanding as far as the eye could see.

The streets were packed with beings from all races, giving them a bustling appearance.

It was a well-ordered place with a friendly and peaceful atmosphere. Top experts of the Saint and Quasi-Emperor Stages were commonplace.

However, Emperors remained a rare sight here. Along the way, Lin Xun only sensed the auras of a few Emperor experts, who were laying low in different areas and not revealing themselves in public.

Suddenly, a big and beautiful carriage sped from the street in front. The pedestrians hurriedly made way for it with respect and even awe on their faces.

The reason was the totem of the Celestial Phoenix Clan on this carriage, which was a Celestial Phoenix wreathed in gorgeous flames with its wings open like it was about to take off.

When this carriage passed by Lin Xun, a pleasant voice laced with visible surprise rang out, "Mister Lin?"

Chapter 2268 Luo Jia's Refusal

The virtually flying treasure carriage screeched to a halt.

A fair, smooth, slender hand lifted the curtain, and a beautiful face that should belong to a painting peeked out from it. Her red lips were slightly parted, her sparkling eyes full of surprise as she looked at Lin Xun who was on the side of the street.

A burst of gasps and exclamations echoed from the crowd around. Many men revealed amazed, even intoxicated expressions.

Meanwhile, those who recognized Luo Jia were startled. What brought this goddess to the city today?

At the same time, Lin Xun was stunned as this also took him aback. “Miss Luo Jia?”

Luo Jia immediately smiled. She then quickly glanced around before waving at him. “Mister Lin, please come. Let’s talk inside.”

Lin Xun happily agreed and walked straight over.

He had come to Thousand Flame Imperial City this time to find people from the Celestial Phoenix Clan. Running into Luo Jia here had undoubtedly saved him a lot of trouble.

However, as he boarded the treasure carriage, the middle-aged man in purple clothes driving it frowned with a cold glint in his eyes and said, “Young Miss...”

Luo Jia's soft voice came out from the carriage. “Uncle Rong, Mister Lin has been a very good friend of mine for decades. Don't treat him as an outsider.”

Uncle Rong gazed at Lin Xun for a moment before nodding. “Please get on.”

Lin Xun didn’t think badly of the other party for this. He smiled and entered the carriage .

The carriage continued on its way and quickly disappeared into the bustling street.

“Mister Lin, what brings you to the Celestial Phoenix World?” Inside the carriage house that was permeated with a faint fragrance, Luo Jia looked at Lin Xun with pleasant surprise.

She was sitting cross-legged in a relaxed manner. She wore her long, black hair in a casual bun. Her skin was almost glistening, and her delicate body was clad in a light-blue, feathered dress.

Compared to before, Luo Jia's temperament had become much more refined and gentle. With jade-like skin and a heavenly natural beauty, she was like a blooming wild orchid.

As she spoke, she picked up a jade pot and poured a cup of aromatic Mist Tea for Lin Xun, delivering it to him with both hands.

“I didn't expect to see you so soon either.” Lin Xun accepted the tea with a smile.

Then, he gave her a brief version of his journey in the True Dragon World, and in the end, he stated his purpose of coming to the Celestial Phoenix World.

Getting the full situation, Luo Jia lightly pursed her lips and couldn't help but smile. “In that case, our meeting is indeed quite a coincidence.”

Lin Xun nodded in agreement. Speaking of which, the last time he saw Luo Jia was all the way back in the Kunlun Dominion.

After a few decades flying by, he was already a supreme Great Emperor, while Luo Jia herself was a supreme quasi-Emperor expert.

Luo Jia thought for a moment and said, “Mister Lin, you can leave the matter of returning to the Ancient Nebula Road to me. It's just that...”

The purple-robed middle-aged man's low voice suddenly came from outside, “Young Miss, our clan's passage to the Ancient Nebula Road requires the joint force of three supreme elders to open. This is...no easy matter. Moreover, your current situation...”

Luo Jia interrupted him, “That's enough, Uncle Rong. I have my own plan.”

Saying that, she turned to Lin Xun, looking somewhat helpless. “Uncle Rong is my father's trusted confidante. He has been by my side for many years, always treating me like his own grandchild. You don't have to take his words to heart.”

Lin Xun smiled, then mused, “Luo Jia, are you in trouble?”

Luo Jia was stunned that he asked. She blinked innocently and laughed, “This is the territory of my Celestial Phoenix Clan. What can possibly trouble me?”

Lin Xun put down his teacup and sighed softly, “If you really consider me a good friend, then stop trying to hide it from me. Who knows, maybe I can offer some help.”

“Sir, you are an outsider. Please don't intervene with our young lady's matter,” Uncle Rong's voice rang out again. “If you really want what's best for Young Miss, then I suggest you leave now, lest you needlessly get caught up in this storm and become a burden.”

These words were spoken in a calm tone, but they were unceremonious.

Lin Xun furrowed his brows, but he wasn't angry and instead looked at Luo Jia. “It seems that you've really encountered something very tricky.”

Luo Jia's gaze was complicated. She smiled bitterly, "When good friends meet, I, as the host, should have properly welcomed and entertained you, yet I've got you concerned about my affairs before I could do any of those things."

After a pause, she calmly and seriously said, "Brother Lin, what I'm dealing with is extremely problematic. It's not that I don't want your help, but that it involves not only my Celestial Phoenix Clan but also the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans. It will...deeply upset me if you get caught up in this because of me."

Uncle Rong once again spoke up, this time with urgency, "Miss, there's not much time left. We need to hurry to True Spirit Palace. The longer we drag on, Young Master..."

Luo Jia cut him off, "I know, stop the carriage."

She took a deep breath and flipped her hand. A purple jade talisman appeared, which she handed to Lin Xun while transmitting, "Brother Lin, hold on to this. When my business is settled, I'll find you so we can catch up."

With that, she pushed Lin Xun off the carriage without warning, her expression apologetic but resolute. She clearly had no intention of letting him get involved.

Lin Xun sighed in his heart and didn't insist. He went with the force and got off.

"Brother Lin, I will properly apologize to you on another day. Please don't be angry." Luo Jia couldn't help but transmit again, her voice full of guilt.

Meanwhile, the purple-robed man had already driven the carriage away.

This meeting was brief as it had ended so hastily.

Lin Xun stood in place and thought to himself. You treat me as a friend, so how can I just stand by and watch?

Swish!

He quietly vanished on the spot.

Before a bustling restaurant several thousand feet away from his original place, a black-clothed man who was drinking wine seemed to sense something. His pupils shrank, revealing an astonished look.

Almost at the same time, a large hand pressed on his shoulder. He stiffened from head to toe and subconsciously wanted to resist.

However, he only felt his whole body go powerless as a force had firmly locked up his energy. His face sank drastically. "Friend, what do you mean by this?"

He was an Emperor expert, but he had been restrained in the blink of an eye! This was simply terrifying!

Standing next to him, the owner of that hand was none other than Lin Xun.

With one hand on the black-clothed man's shoulder, he quickly moved toward a distant, remote corner and casually asked, "Why were you so sneaky before, tailing that carriage?"

From the moment Lin Xun had boarded the treasure carriage, his spirit sense had already noticed that someone had been secretly trailing it.

This was also a basis on which he determined that Luo Jia was in trouble.

"Friend, you can't afford to meddle in this matter. Take my advice and don't intervene, or else you'll find yourself in a great disaster." The black-clothed man quickly calmed down despite being confined. "Also, you probably don't know who I am yet. If you did, you certainly wouldn't dare to treat me like this."

His voice was now fearless and even laced with threats.

Crack!

The black-clothed man suddenly heard the sound of his bones shattering. Right after, he felt his spirit being viciously grabbed and pulled out.

Not good!

He was scared out of his wits. Who the hell is this, getting right to a fight at the drop of a hat? Is he not afraid of offending someone he shouldn't?!

The man nearly screamed out when he felt a stabbing pain in his consciousness. A horrifying spirit sense was drilling into his spirit like a sharp cone.

It was soul search!

Instantly knowing what was happening to him, the black-clothed man was taken over by incomparable fear.

The other party never asked who he was nor cared one bit about his threat, and hadn't even spared him a word after that first question before directly going to search his soul. Just how strong must this guy be to be so unscrupulous?

Before the black-clothed man could delve into this, his vision went black and he lost all consciousness.

A moment later, Lin Xun narrowed his eyes in a frown.

He had gotten the information he wanted.

The black-clothed man, named Xiu Rui, was a second realm Emperor from the Black Tortoise Clan. He was here as a guardian of a young master of the clan called Wu Fatian in his trip to Thousand Flame Imperial City.

The reason why he had tracked down Luo Jia was because some days ago, Luo Jia's younger brother had broken a treasure and offended Wu Fatian.

Wu Fatian had then threatened to execute him three days later if Luo Jia couldn't come up with appropriate compensation!

Of course, this matter certainly could not be so simple.

In Xiu Rui's memory, the damaged treasure was nothing precious nor was it worth much in money.

Wu Fatian had thrown such a tantrum to execute Luo Jia's younger brother simply because Luo Jia had rejected his pursuit at a banquet the other day. This had caused him to lose face, and he just couldn't let it go.

However, the inside story still left Lin Xun a bit puzzled.

This was the Celestial Phoenix World, and Thousand Flame Imperial City was the territory of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage. What gave a young master of the Black Tortoise Clan the guts and arrogance to bully Luo Jia, a descendant of the Celestial Phoenixes here?

Recalling Luo Jia's distraught look and the purple-robed middle-aged man's constant urging, Lin Xun was more and more sure of his conclusion that things were not as simple as they seemed.

“True Spirit Palace... I'd like to see what kind of storm is waiting in there.”

At this thought, Lin Xun jumped right into action, rapidly moving in the direction that the carriage carrying Luo Jia had driven through.

Located in the northeastern area of Thousand Flame Imperial City, True Spirit Palace was an ancient building that only the most honored guests of the Celestial Phoenix Clan were qualified to stay in.

The area around it, too, was not something that just anyone could approach, restricted by various arrays set up by the Divine Forge Imperial Clan and stationed with many powerful guards.

However, in the eyes of experts on Lin Xun's level, these measures were as good as useless and could be completely ignored.

It didn't take him long to quietly appear outside the ancient palace. Not rushing to enter, he first spread his spirit sense to probe into it.

At the moment, the atmosphere inside True Spirit Palace was quite tense.

Uncle Rong stood on the side of the hall entrance, while Luo Jia stood alone in the center of the great hall.

Her eyes were emotionless, carrying a bit of frost, as she looked at the ink-robed man who was sitting leisurely on the main, central seat.

She asked, "I'm here now. Where is my younger brother? Where are you hiding him?"

Use arrow keys (or A / D) to PREV/NEXT chapter

Chapter 2269 Spiritbinder Parasite Scheme

The ink-robed man had dark brown eyes and long, light-green hair, and a tall and strongly built physique. Just by sitting there casually, he emanated a hegemonic might that could swallow the world.

Wu Fatian!

He was one of the Black Tortoise Lineage's young masters. Having reached the peak of the Supreme Quasi-Emperor Stage, he was regarded as the clan's top genius in the current generation.

Looking at Luo Jia standing at the center of the hall, Wu Fatian's eyes didn't hide his burning lust as he boldly scanned her beautiful frame up and down.

Only when anger surfaced on her expression did he smile and say, "Relax, Young Miss, your brother is safe and sound, not missing even a strand of hair on his head. The problem here is that...how are you planning to compensate me?"

"From what I've gathered, the treasure my brother unintentionally broke is just a pendant made from a piece of Cicada Wing Crystal Jade. As expensive as this material is, it was only worth thirty thousand Celestial Phoenix Stones at most," Luo Jia said, taking out a storage bag. "In this is sixty thousand Celestial Phoenix Stones, which is twice the value of that pendant. I believe it's enough as compensation."

Sixty thousand Celestial Phoenix Stones!

This was already a considerable amount of money for any quasi-Emperor.

Sitting next to Wu Fatian was a silver-haired youth with a frosty face and an icy, violent aura.

He snorted coldly, “That Cicada Wing Jade Pendant was Daoist Wu Fatian’s beloved item. Its significance cannot be measured in Celestial Phoenix Stones. Do you really think people like us would care about a mere sixty thousand Celestial Phoenix Stones?”

This person was Bai Shajun, an outstanding expert of the younger generation of the White Tiger Clan with a ferocious temperament and a mad thirst for killing. He was only one step away from entering the Emperor Stage.

Luo Jia sighed in her heart, having guessed things wouldn't be so simple.

Her eyes were cold as she got straight to the point, “Just say it, what exactly do you want?”

With a faint smile, Wu Fatian stood up, walked toward Luo Jia, and stopped in front of her. He asked with a playful gaze, “What do you think?”

Luo Jia said expressionlessly, “Don't tell me that you went through all the trouble just to forcefully have me. How could someone like you easily get carried away by a woman's looks?”

Wu Fatian was stunned. The fervent lust in his eyes suddenly vanished as he said approvingly, “You are a smart woman.”

He then returned to his seat, and after a slight contemplation, he said, “You are different from the rest of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage, having the Luo Clan’s bloodline flowing in your veins, that’s why. If you swear loyalty to me, then I’ll let you leave with your brother.”

Luo Jia was stunned. “Swear loyalty to you?”

Wu Fatian nodded. “Yes, I want your unconditional allegiance, and I might as well tell you that by doing this, I am also saving your life. Otherwise, it will already be impossible for you to defect to me when the great calamity befalls the Celestial Phoenix Clan.”

Luo Jia's heart was aghast inside. Her eyes instantly became ice-cold. “What do you mean? My clan has stood since eternity, how could it possibly meet with a sudden calamity? I’m afraid that even if both the Black Tortoise and White Tiger Clans join forces, they still can’t do much damage to us!”

This was the Celestial Phoenix World that the Celestial Phoenix Lineage had control over like a sovereign!

Wu Fatian smiled in amusement. “Miss, it doesn’t matter whether you believe me or not. Now is the time for you to make a choice.”

Saying that, he flicked his fingers. A red insect egg shot out and floated in front of Luo Jia. “This is the egg of a Spiritbinder Parasite. If you choose to pledge your allegiance, then swallow it.”

Spiritbinder Parasite!

Luo Jia's expression drastically changed. It was claimed that this parasite had the ability to attach itself to even an Emperor’s spirit, and there would be no way to expel it. This was incredibly vile and horrifying.

When one’s spirit got parasitized by it, their life would no longer be in their own hands!

Wu Fatian smilingly continued, “This kind of godly insect is a first-class treasure of nature, very rare and precious. They are a waste on ordinary cultivators who simply aren’t qualified to be controlled by one. Only a dashing expert like you is worth me making this sacrifice willingly.”

Luo Jia's face sank. “What if I don't agree?”

Wu Fatian's smile faded into an indifferent expression. “It’s no longer up to you from the moment you entered this palace.”

The atmosphere suddenly became heavily oppressive. Bai Shajun’s lips curled up into a derisive sneer.

Luo Jia realized something was very amiss. She said in a chilling tone, “Can I see my younger brother first?”

Wu Fatian chortled. “This situation has come to this, Miss, and you're still thinking about that piece of trash of a younger brother. To tell you the truth, on the first day he got captured, he was so scared out of his wits that voluntarily acceded to me.”

“What?” Luo Jia paled. “That's impossible! Even if that's really the case, he must have been forced to do so under despicable means!”

Wu Fatian gave no explanation and just clapped his hands.

Very quickly, a white-robed youth came out from the wing of the hall. His face was as white as a sheet and plastered with fright. Upon entrance, he kneeled down respectfully and kowtowed three times toward Wu Fatian. Only after standing up did he finally look at Luo Jia.

Meanwhile, Luo Jia had been struck dumb. Was this still her youthful, spirited brother?

How could he...become so servile? Where did his sense of honor go?!

“Big Sis, Lord Wu Fatian is right. Only by swearing allegiance can we live. If you trust me at all, please...hurry and submit,” said the white-robed youth seriously.

“Luo Xing! You...” Luo Jia was so angry that she trembled from head to toe. She had come here to save this younger brother of hers, but who could have thought that he had already betrayed the clan and submitted to an outsider? On top of that, he even urged her to defect as well!

Immediately, Luo Jia's pretty face turned livid from utter rage. “Wu Fatian, what did you do to my brother?”

“You are excused,” said Wu Fatian indifferently as he gave Luo Xing a glance.

“Yes, my lord.” Luo Xing turned to leave.

“You stop right there!” Luo Jia yelled, but Luo Xing ignored her completely as he walked away.

A chill ran through Luo Jia's heart. She immediately ordered, “Uncle Rong, capture Luo Xing. We need to take him back to the clan!”

To her surprise, Uncle Rong, who had accompanied her all the way here, did not act at this moment.

“Uncle Rong?” She turned around with an infuriated expression.

Meeting her eyes, the purple-robed man standing by the entrance revealed a bizarre smile. “Young Master Luo Xing didn’t make the wrong decision. I think that you should heed his example and swear loyalty to Lord Wu Fatian of the Black Tortoise Clan.”

Luo Jia’s pupils dilated. She looked like she was struck by lightning as both her body and mind felt like they had fallen into an ice cave. A shiver rushed through every part of her when the realization hit that Uncle Rong had also defected!

Full of confusion, Luo Jia asked with anger, “Have you not considered that our clan will execute you?”

Uncle Rong put on an unnatural smile. “Young Miss, I had already erased all traces of me bringing you here. Even if you disappear for a while for no reason, the clan won't suspect this old man.”

Luo Jia's hands and feet went cold. She finally understood that this was a well-planned trap specially prepared for her!

Her younger brother Luo Xing had turned traitor, so had Uncle Rong, and now, it was her turn to make a choice as well!

Luo Jia turned to Wu Fatian and Bai Shajun, “What exactly...are you planning?!”

Wu Fatian and Bai Shajun exchanged a look and broke into laughter.

“Miss, as I said, you still have a chance to defect now, but it will be too late when the Celestial Phoenix Clan is in trouble,” Wu Fatian leisurely said like a wise sage who held the key to victory. “Moreover, it’s already impossible to leave. If you don’t obediently swallow this Spiritbinder Parasite egg, we’ll have no choice but to lend you a hand.”

With that, he glanced at Uncle Rong.

Uncle Rong immediately stepped forward with a cold and morose look. “Young Miss, it’s better you do it yourself, because this old man...may hurt you in the process!”

“Is that so?” Luo Jia suddenly charged out, aiming to destroy the insect egg floating in front of her.

However, Uncle Rong was quick to react and blocked her halfway, pressing a palm on her shoulder.

Boom!

A terrifying power spread and imprisoned her strength. She was unable to move an inch.

“Young Miss, it seems that I can only help you.” With a humorless smile, Uncle Rong held the egg between his thumb and pointer finger, wanting to stuff it into her mouth.

Seeing this, Luo Jia's eyes gleamed with despair.

At the same time, the expressions of Wu Fatian and Bai Shajun all revealed what seemed to be a cruel eagerness. Once a goddess like Luo Jia was under control, she would be at their mercy to abuse as they pleased!

As they pictured unspeakable things in their heads, their breathing became rapid and heavy.

Right at this juncture...

Swish!

A void-like sword flashed out of thin air and chopped off Uncle Rong's right hand that was holding the insect egg. Blood splashed like the end of a waterfall.

Caught off guard, Uncle Rong screamed wretchedly with a twisted face. Almost instinctively, he rolled sideways.

Luo Jia was dumbfounded. Her eyes glazed over, a bit incredulous that such a turn of events had happened when she had already felt hopeless.

She couldn't help but turn around and saw that a familiar figure had appeared by her side. On his handsome face was the usual calmness that gave people a sense of security.

“Lin Xun, I didn't think...you’d save me again...” sighed Luo Jia emotionally.

He had saved her more than once in the Nine Domains Battlefield and the Kunlun Dominion.

However, she had never expected that it would still be Lin Xun who rescued her when both her younger brother and Uncle Rong had betrayed her right in the territory of the Celestial Phoenix Clan.

Meanwhile, Wu Fatian’s and Bai Shajun's excitement had frozen on their faces, and darkened in unison as they looked at the uninvited guest.

“It's alright now. I’m here.” Lin Xun's voice was gentle as he patted Luo Jia's shoulder.

Secretly, he was glad that he had decided to follow her. If he hadn’t, then she probably would have zero chance of avoiding this disaster.

“It's you!” Uncle Rong, left with only one arm, shouted in shock and anger.

Chapter 2270 A Premeditated Catastrophe

Lin Xun swept Uncle Rong an icy look. “No wonder you persistently prevented me from helping Luo Jia, old fogey. Clearly, you had already harbored evil intentions then. What's the use of keeping a traitor like you around?”

Swish!

The illusory sword swept up and slashed at Uncle Rong.

It was the Dao Formless Sword!

The most terrifying thing about this weapon was that while almost invisible, its killing power was enormous. The average Emperor, even if they could sense its threatening presence, still wouldn’t be unable to lock on its trajectory at all.

Uncle Rong's face changed drastically. With a furious roar, he ran his energy to capacity, and a blazing, Emperor-grade armor appeared, fully covering him.

Scarlet Light Emperor Armor!

This was Uncle Rong's life-bound Emperor armor. Its astonishing defensive power had helped him defuse many fatal risks over the years.

However, how could the might of the Dao Formless Sword be ordinary?

Under its slash, the burning scarlet armor cracked like a spider's web and exploded into a rain of sparks with a bang.

Poof!

At the same time, Uncle Rong was dissected from the torso. The matchless sword qi then ground his spirit to bits and erased them.

The attack had only taken seconds. Uncle Rong, a third realm Emperor, had been killed by a single sword strike!

The bloody scene staggered Wu Fatian and Bai Shajun. Their faces twisted as they jumped to their feet.

As supreme quasi-Emperors, how could they ever imagine that a lofty Emperor expert, who could peer down upon everyone in the world, would be slashed to death on the spot like a piece of paper?

This was simply horrifying!

Even Luo Jia gawked, shocked to the core with her mouth open. After all those years since they had last seen each other, this guy was already an Emperor!

“Who are you?! How dare you spoil my plan?!” bellowed Wu Fatian, but the panic written all over his face betrayed how fearful he was at heart.

“Do not panic, Young Master. I am right here,” echoed an old voice suddenly as a white-haired elder with a walking cane emerged. Every time his eyes closed and opened, an intimidating divine fire streamed in them.

The sight of this old man instantly reassured Wu Fatian. The panic on his face was replaced by a sinister chill. He said through gritted teeth, “Who are you? Why are you meddling in my affairs?”

Lin Xun didn't even bother to spare such a minor character a look. His gaze directly landed on the white-haired old man as he commented, "No wonder he dares to be so rampant; he has a seventh realm lapdog guarding him in the dark."

In the Celestial Phoenix World, a seventh realm Emperor could be considered a god in the sky that every being looked up to.

However, Lin Xun reduced him to a lapdog.

Luo Jia's eyes gleamed with a subtle look in reaction to this as her heart tumbled in emotions. *It's only been a few decades. Just what kind of amazing transformations has Lin Xun gone through?*

On the other hand, the white-haired elder's expression clouded over. "That's some bold words for a third realm Emperor. Believe it or not, I can kill you on the spot with a flip of my hand."

Lin Xun snorted with disdain in his eyes. "Why don't you show me? Come."

How could the white-haired elder tolerate this kind of provocation? He slapped out with his palm.

How mighty was a seventh realm Emperor expert? A casual strike from them could suppress a third realm Emperor who knew nothing about the heights of heaven!

This was why the white-haired elder's tone was so confident and domineering.

As a matter of fact, any other third realm expert would indeed fail to block this kind of attack, but unfortunately, Lin Xun was not an ordinary one.

His palm also struck out in a similarly casual fashion.

What ensued was a deafening explosion. Under the horrified gazes of Wu Fatian and Bai Shajun, Lin Xun remained unharmed while the white-haired elder was slapped to the ground in a mangled state. His flesh and blood had become a paste, and his tendons and bones all shattered.

The entire hall shook. If not for the fact that Lin Xun had used his strength to keep the impact under control, his strike could have obliterated the palace.

Wu Fatian and Bai Shajun were so scared that their legs went limp. They dropped to the ground paralyzed, their minds blank. *Critically injuring a seventh realm Emperor with a slap, what kind of monster is this man...?*

Meanwhile, Luo Jia had completely frozen there too.

Lin Xun killing Uncle Rong with a single sword strike had already shocked her completely. Now, even a seventh level character appeared so powerless in front of him. This overturned her cognition and went beyond everything she ever dared to imagine!

Lin Xun looked down at the white-haired elder and said indifferently, "Didn't you say you could kill me with a flip of your hand? Why are you the one lying flat on the floor and not me?"

The white-haired elder raised his head with difficulty, his eyes tinged with panic. "I failed to recognize your real strength, Senior. Please forgive me!"

"Too late." Lin Xun flicked his fingers.

The white-haired elder instantly turned to ashes and dissipated into oblivion.

Swish!

Almost at the same time, a blurry figure appeared out of thin air and grabbed Bai Shajun who had been paralyzed with fear, wanting to teleport away.

The sudden occurrence didn't surprise Lin Xun. On the contrary, he seemed to have already predicted it as he flatly asked, "You think I didn't detect your presence?"

Clatter~

Countless sword qi emerged, crowding the whole high space of the hall before they swiftly dropped down and blocked the blurry figure's path.

The figure jerked back to their original position and said in a heavy voice, "Friend, you should show mercy where it is possible. If you insist on pushing us over the edge, our White Tiger Clan won't take it lying down!"

This figure was revealed to be a gray-robed woman with a cold and stern bearing. Shrouded in flowing silver killing aura that resembled starlight, her might was terrifying.

"Eighth realm?" Lin Xun looked surprised. "With this cultivation level, your status in the White Tiger Clan shouldn't be low."

The gray-robed woman was indifferent. "Therefore, you know what the wisest choice you should make now is."

Lin Xun smiled, "My choice is simple. Since killing you is as easy as killing a chicken, I don't have to be polite or scrupulous."

The gray-robed woman's eyes dilated with gravity.

Lin Xun had already attacked, boldly so. The Dao Formless Sword flashed, interpreting the mysteries of the Momentary Dao-Slashing Sword with its full power.

The gray-robed woman's figure flickered and swiftly arrived at the entrance of the hall, where she looked back and laughed coldly, "Your strike is nothing special, but I shall remember this offense!"

Lin Xun gazed at her with pity. "But, can you still leave?"

The gray-robed woman was stunned. Finally noticing something, she looked down to see that the lower half of her body had been soundlessly and evenly separated from the upper half, as if she had been sliced at the waist.

Immediately following, blood gushed out like a spring. The gory scene agitated her so much that her face distorted. She wanted to scream, but her vision already went black and her spirit burst.

Losing the hand that had been clutching him, Bai Shajun plopped down in a pool of hot blood, with gore all over his face as well. He trembled in pure fear as the only small trace of clarity left in his mind also collapsed.

An eighth realm Emperor expert, who was also an honorable relic of the White Tiger Lineage, had been slain in such an unexpected fashion!

This pushed Bai Shajun to the verge of madness.

Some distance away, Wu Fatian, who had been watching the whole thing, was so scared that he had lost all senses along with his mind.

Clang!

Lin Xun put away the Dao Formless Sword and glanced at Luo Jia. Seeing her stupor, he couldn't help but laugh, "Was it that scary?"

Luo Jia snapped back to reality. She asked dully, "What do you think?"

Lin Xun scratched his nose and smiled wryly. He finally said, "This isn't a place we should stay for long. Let's leave first."

With that, he directly knocked out Wu Fatian, Bai Shajun, and Luo Xing who was hiding in the wing. Stuffing them into the Dao Endless Pagoda, he cleaned up the hall before leaving quietly with Luo Jia.

.....

Two hours later, in an inn.

“It really is a calculated action,” Lin Xun pondered.

He had just soul-searched Wu Fatian and Bai Shajun. The information obtained from their memories could be described as astonishing and essential.

Some time ago, the White Tiger and the Black Tortoise Clans had each sent a team to the Celestial Phoenix World, ostensibly to discuss some cooperations between the three clans.

In reality, they planned to hurt the Celestial Phoenix Clan during this visit!

The reason was actually simple: they were acting under the order of the Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos!

As for why the Luo Clan chose this time to deal with the Celestial Phoenix Clan, even Wu Fatian and Bai Shajun had no idea.

Since they were merely following orders, at the end of the day, they were merely the Luo Clan’s pawns.

Still, Lin Xun had obtained an extremely valuable clue from the two’s memories.

In around three months, a big shot of the Luo Clan would come here from the other side of the cosmos!

The current operation of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans was nothing more than a small precursor for what this big shot would do after arrival.

However, Lin Xun was even more surprised by this. For what reason would the Luo Clan go so far as to send an important person over to deal with the Celestial Phoenix Clan?

Luo Jia's pretty face turned pale when she learned about all this. “No wonder they were all so fearless. Turns out they are acting under the Luo Clan’s banner!”

Lin Xun mused, “Do you know why the Luo Clan wants to harm your clan?”

Luo Jia frowned. After thinking long and hard, she shook her head. “I'm not sure, but in the far past, the Celestial Phoenix Lineage severed all ties with the faraway Luo Clan. It was said that this made the Luo Clan incredibly furious, but nothing had been done afterward. It’s been eons since then, so it can’t be that they are still bothered by this?”

Lin Xun actually knew more about this than her. The True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor had chosen to help his mother, thus suffering the suppression of the Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos.

Although the Celestial Phoenix Clan hadn’t intervened in this, it had severed its relationship with the Luo Clan for hunting down Luo Qingxun.

Only the Black Tortoise and White Tiger Clans had been clinging to the Luo Clan since time immemorial. They could be described as loyal and devoted subjects.

All of a sudden, the Celestial Phoenix Clan had welcomed a catastrophe spearheaded by the Luo Clan and enforced by the White Tigers and Black Tortoises. This might just be related to the 'breakup' caused by the Celestial Phoenix Clan back then.

"This won't do. I must immediately inform the clan!" Luo Jia was unable to sit still any longer and stood up worriedly.

"Wait." Lin Xun stopped her.

Chapter 2271 Divine Forge Workshop

Luo Jia looked at Lin Xun in confusion. Only when the latter pointed at the unconscious Luo Xing did she realize it. She had been so concerned about the safety of the clan that she forgot about this 'little traitor'!

"I just checked and found that his spirit has been planted with a Spiritbinder Parasite. But I also found the resolution from Wu Fatian's memory," Lin Xun said as he handed a jade slip to Luo Jia.

"Thank you so much, Brother Lin." Luo Jia's beautiful eyes were flooded with heartfelt gratitude. She was also deeply moved.

She knew very well that if Lin Xun hadn't come to save her, she would have ended up very miserable this time.

"Hey, you were just overwhelmed by stress because you care too much," Lin Xun warmly comforted her. "I will be staying in this inn for a while. If you run into trouble again, make sure to come and find me before anything."

"Mhm," replied Luo Jia, her heart dancing in a wave of unprecedented good feelings. This kind of care and concern from a friend filled her with warmth.

Lin Xun smiled and patted her shoulder. "Don't ever be afraid of troubling me like you were before. And don't forget that eighth realm Emperors can't even bear more than one strike from me."

Luo Jia bit her lips, and as if having mustered up enough courage, she suddenly opened her arms and hugged Lin Xun tightly.

Lin Xun stiffened as he felt a kind soft elasticity pressing against him. In fact, he could have dodged this, and he would have if he had known that she would unexpectedly give a big hug...

Luo Jia soon released him. Her pretty face was now glazed with rosy clouds as her limpid eyes lowered, making her look extraordinarily charming.

Pretending to be calm, she teased, “If I didn’t know that you already have Miss Jingxuan, I might just fall for you.

“Of course, don't overthink this. I just want to give you a hug. There was no weird intention behind it.”

Saying that, she seemed a little shy. She hastily grabbed her unconscious brother and left.

Lin Xun was stunned. A wisp of orchid fragrance still lingered around his nose. He smiled and said to himself, “After knowing that I’m going to be a father...how could I dare overthink stuff like this...?”

There was a hint of lament in his voice.

With regards to the danger that the Celestial Phoenix Clan was facing, an outsider like Lin Xun couldn’t just carelessly get involved.

However, if possible, he would like to meet the big shot from the Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos who was going to arrive in three months.

In the end, he made up his mind, “That's it, I’ll stay in Thousand Flame Imperial City a while longer.”

He then got up and walked out of the inn.

Before coming here, Ao Xingtang had told him that the Divine Forge Imperial Clan was the best in the world when it came to crafting tools, and that its founding ancestor had even held the title of Blacksmith Emperor.

Lin Xun also wanted to see if he could take this opportunity to get his life-bound Emperor weapon forged.

.....

Thousand Flame Imperial City was extremely vast, prosperous, and populated as the number one city in the Celestial Phoenix World.

The Divine Forge Imperial Clan, who was under the command of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage, was the ruler of this city.

In the different streets here, one could see signboards with ‘Divine Forge Workshop’ written on them hanging everywhere.

This workshop was the Divine Forge Imperial Clan's unique business.

Soon, Lin Xun entered a Divine Forge Workshop numbered 'C79' that he had randomly found.

It was a large-scale shop with an ancient and elegant style. The orderly arranged counters displayed a variety of treasures that brightened the whole room with their colorful auras.

An attendant came forward, refined and courteous as she welcomed Lin Xun.

The Divine Forge Workshop sold all kinds of treasures and also accepted custom orders. By spending a considerable amount of money, customers could even appoint the master blacksmith they wanted to make their order.

The attendant said, "Senior, Divine Forge Workshop C79 currently has over nine hundred custom orders to process, so you will have to wait a while should you want a customized treasure.

"Of course, you can also spend a certain amount of Celestial Phoenix Stones and invite a specialized blacksmith to attend to you."

According to the attendant, this workshop was presided over by three master blacksmiths of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan, who didn't bother with normal orders and only worked on expensive ones.

Lin Xun's interest was piqued. "How much would a custom Emperor weapon cost me?"

The attendant was dumbfounded, and the way she looked at Lin Xun immediately changed. She respectfully confirmed, "Senior, you would like to order an Emperor-grade weapon?"

Lin Xun nodded.

The attendant pondered, "To be completely honest with you, only the grandmasters of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan can craft Emperor-grade tools. So if an Emperor weapon is what you need, then your destination is among the top ten 'class A' workshops. As long as you can afford the price, I believe that the skills of our grandmasters will not let you down."

From her explanation, Lin Xun understood that Workshop C79 was far from being capable of forging Emperor-grade tools.

However, he didn't intend to let others take part in the crafting of his own life-bound Emperor weapon. He only came to the Divine Forge Workshop to have a look at their mastery in this profession.

As it turned out, the foundation of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan was indeed quite deep.

Just a workshop labeled C79 already had over nine hundred custom orders lining up. One could imagine how many treasures all the Divine Forge Workshops in this huge city had to produce every single day!

If this had been the case for countless years, then their clansmen should have been forging away almost their entire time. Since this was no different from improving their skill every day, it would be hard not to become formidable.

“Looks like I need to gain a deeper understanding of their inner workings.” Lin Xun contemplated for a while and left Workshop C79.

Currently, he already had a rough idea for the life-bound Emperor weapon he wanted. It only needed some further improvements to be perfect.

After all, the life-bound Emperor weapon was a treasure that would be intimately related to one’s own dao cultivation. Any mistakes in crafting it would make it impossible to bring out one’s full power in combat.

Since the Divine Forge Workshops produced countless treasures on a daily basis that came in all sorts of shapes and sizes, they might give Lin Xun a lot of inspiration.

Fifteen minutes later, in Divine Forge Workshop A10.

Any workshop with the character ‘A’ in its name was already considered a core place of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan. It only received guests with special identities, while ordinary people weren’t qualified for entry.

Lin Xun’s identity was not special, but his cultivation was. He got himself into the shop without any obstruction after slightly revealing his Emperor aura.

On top of that, he got his own one-on-one attendant.

“You are here to customize your own item, Senior?” The attendant was a woman with top-notch temperament and beauty. She was clad in a well-tailored scarlet dress and wore her ink-black hair in a bun. Not only her appearance, but her demeanor was also impeccable, even just in the way she pursed her red lips and slightly exposed her perfect teeth.

She introduced herself as Yao Tao.

Lin Xun said, “I’ll take a look around first.”

He browsed his way through the counters. Nearly every item in display was an Emperor-grade treasure, and all of them were covered by an obscure restrictive power.

Emperor-grade treasures were divided into three grades. From the lowest, they were mythic, spirit, and divine grades.

Each grade was further divided into three tiers: upper, mid, and lower.

These were the total of three grades and nine tiers.

The most commonly seen was mythic-grade Emperor treasures.

Spirit-grade Emperor treasures had their own artifact spirit, which was why they were extremely precious and often be called 'treasures of nature.'

As for divine-grade Emperor artifacts, which were also often known as Emperor Dao Ultimate Weapons, they were incredibly powerful, capable of crushing worlds. At this point, any of these was a legend in itself.

Their availability was also just like that of the legends: extremely rare.

Since the beginning of his cultivation life until now, Lin Xun had seen his fair share of exotic, powerful treasures, but only a few of them fell in the category of divine-grade Emperor weapons.

"All of these Emperor-grade tools came from the hands of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan grandmaster smiths?" As Lin Xun walked along the big counter, he saw that all the products were mythic-grade, and there wasn't anything more powerful.

However, he could tell that the forging techniques used on each and every of them were superb, even transcendent, to the point that everything from his knowledge could hardly compare. Some of the conceptions demonstrated in these treasures were so marvelous that they opened his eyes.

Yao Tao respectfully answered, "That is correct."

Lin Xun commented, "Not bad."

As he was about to resume browsing, there was a cold snort. "Hearing your comment, Esteemed Guest, I suppose you also know a thing or two about smithing?"

The person's voice carried displeasure, faint, but it was definitely there. At some point, a black-clad woman had appeared and was walking toward Lin Xun. She had long, fiery-red hair, and fair, almost glistening skin. Along her petite frame, fire sparks streamed up and down with a divine glow.

Yao Tao hurriedly introduced the woman to Lin Xun in a respectful manner.

As it turned out, the black-clad woman was Lian Hongxiu, one of the three great grandmaster smiths of the Divine Forge Workshop business and the owner of Workshop A10. She was also a high-ranking elder of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan.

“It was just a mindless comment. Please don’t take it seriously, Fellow Daoist. Should I have offended you, I hope for your forgiveness.” Lin Xun smiled good-naturedly. He knew very well that alchemists and blacksmiths in general were very proud and conceited people.

Lian Hongxiu furrowed her brows. “I just want to know, what do you mean by ‘not bad’? Could it be that these Emperor-grade tools on the counter just barely have your approval?”

Obviously, Lin Xun's previous comment made her quite upset.

As a grandmaster smith of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan, she was well known throughout the Celestial Phoenix World and was looked up to by countless experts. Even a good number of big figures of major clans had to be on their best behavior in front of her.

This was the status of a grandmaster smith.

Furthermore, Lian Hongxiu was no ordinary grandmaster smith. During her long career, she had crafted nearly a hundred pieces of Emperor-grade weapons. Having attained a godly level of skills on par with Creation, she had won the respect of many Emperor experts.

Many Emperors had come to the Divine Forge Imperial Clan to specially ask her to forge for them, and they were even willing to wait many years for it!

“Do you really want to hear my honest opinion?” Lin Xun originally intended to laugh it off, but seeing how serious Lian Hongxiu was, he knew this matter could not be glossed over.

“Speak.” Lian Hongxiu’s tone was rigid, and her eyes carried anger. It was as though she hadn’t expected that Lin Xun would really want to challenge her in the way of smithing.

Lin Xun was not offended by her attitude. After thinking for a moment, he said seriously, “You have encountered a bottleneck in smithing that you cannot overcome no matter what, am I right?”

Lian Hongxiu was dumbstruck.

Chapter 2272 Unexpected Extraordinary Expert?

Suddenly, Lian Hongxiu coldly countered, “Humph! This is no longer a secret in Thousand Flame Imperial City. Anyone who deliberately asks around can find out about it.”

Lin Xun smiled calmly, “But I also know that the bottleneck you are currently experiencing has been troubling you for around fifteen hundred years, and even now, you still haven’t found a way to break through it.”

Lian Hongxiu almost jumped in shock. She blurted out, “How did you know that?”

She couldn't remain calm because even in the Divine Forge Imperial Clan, there weren't many who could accurately tell how long this artist block had been troubling her.

Yet, an outsider had just pointed it out at the drop of a hat!

Keeping a smile on his face, Lin Xun pointed at a flying sword on the counter. “It’s marked that this Emperor-grade weapon was crafted thirty-five hundred years ago, and it can be seen that you started trying something different precisely from this weapon in order to go further on your path of smithing.”

Lian Hongxiu finally understood, and she looked at Lin Xun in an entirely new light. Even if someone had a sky-high cultivation strength, it would still be impossible for them to obtain such a subtle clue from a single weapon without decent knowledge on crafting.

In fact, it was difficult for even a grandmaster smith unless they looked very carefully.

This young man, however, had managed to do so!

Lin Xun continued without a care, “Everything you crafted after this flying sword could be regarded as top-class and unique, all having your trademarks and even signs of unconventional gambits. The reason is that although you had made no substantial breakthrough in the foundation then, you had probably spent a great deal of effort in the process. This is why I could reckon from these treasures that you haven’t overcome your block yet.”

His speech had Lian Hongxiu frozen on the spot, her expression quickly shifting while her heart churned and even trembled.

It was because he had hit the nail on the head. Every word, every sentence he had uttered accurately dissected her current predicament in the craft!

Meanwhile, Yao Tao was also dumbfounded. *Is this customer...an extraordinary expert hidden among people?*

Almost no one knew better than her how high Lian Hongxiu's status in the Divine Forge Imperial Clan and how profound her attainments in the dao of smithing was.

Yet, an outsider had seen through Lian Hongxiu's current situation by just observing these tools she had made. There was no doubt how incredible this was!

After a long silence, Lian Hongxiu, who came to her senses like she had just woken up from a dream, started to treat Lin Xun with reverence, "May I know your name, sir?"

"Lin Daoyuan." Lin Xun casually said, "If there is nothing else, I will take my leave."

Saying that, he turned to leave. It had been a rewarding experience to study the treasures in this workshop one by one, and they gave him quite many inspirations.

Next, he planned to visit the other Divine Forge Workshops.

"Wait," Lian Hongxiu hurriedly said. "Fellow Daoist, I was blind and took too much of your time. May I ask you to stay for a moment so I can make amends?"

Saying this, she bowed slightly toward Lin Xun with a hopeful look.

An idea uncontrollably sprouted in her mind. Since this expert could point out her bottleneck in such a short timeframe, perhaps some pointers from him could give her a chance to break through this hurdle?

Yao Tao's mouth was wide open in shock. She could swear that this was the first time she had seen Lian Hongxiu treat a guest so respectfully!

In the past, even if the customer was a renowned Emperor expert who could call the wind and the rain, Lian Hongxiu still wouldn't act this way!

"You want my instruction?" Lin Xun saw through Lian Hongxiu's intention right away.

Lian Hongxiu looked sheepish, but she nodded frankly. "If you could give me guidance and help me break through my current block, I will agree to any demand you have unconditionally, as long as it's something I can do!"

Lin Xun thought for a second and said, "How about this, do you mind taking me to the other Divine Forge Workshops so I can have a look first?"

Does this mean he agrees?

Lian Hongxiu was a little uncertain, but she still agreed without a moment's hesitation, "With pleasure."

"Let's go." Lin Xun smiled and marched outside.

Lian Hongxiu hurriedly caught up with him.

Watching all this transpiring right before her eyes, Yao Tao entered a trance, her heart thumping with infatuation. *That senior is so dashing...so charming...*

.....

In Divine Forge Workshop A9.

Upon hearing that Lian Hongxiu had arrived with a young Emperor expert, Lian Yuntian, the grandmaster smith in charge of this workshop, almost thought that she was accompanying a big shot from the Celestial Phoenix Clan. As a result, he hurriedly came out to welcome them.

However, he was puzzled when he saw Lin Xun. *Who is this guy? How did he make a prideful one like Lian Hongxiu accompany him all the way here?*

When Lian Yuntian heard from Lian Hongxiu about what had just happened, his first reaction was: *This guy is likely to be a scammer!*

Who doesn't know that in the art of smithing, no one dares to claim themselves superior to our Divine Forge Imperial Clan in the entire Celestial Phoenix World?

And yet, Hongxiu is placing high hopes on an outsider to help her break through her jam? Ridiculous, simply absurd!

However, Lian Yuntian didn't show his thoughts on his face. Instead, he discreetly assessed Lin Xun and decided to personally test the latter's ability. Perhaps only factual proof could awaken Lian Hongxiu from her stubborn trust in this scammer.

It wasn't until Lin Xun had finished appraising all the treasures in Workshop A9 did Lian Yuntian finally ask with a smile, "Fellow Daoist Lin, what do you think about these Emperor-grade weapons that I made?"

Lin Xun swept him an indifferent glance and nodded, "Not bad."

Merely not bad?

Lian Yuntian was stunned. His expression was almost an exact copy of Lian Hongxiu's when she had heard the evaluation for her. Anger also rose in him as he felt like he was being provoked.

Taking a deep breath to suppress the displeasure in his heart, Lian Yuntian said, "Could I ask you to elaborate, Fellow Daoist Lin?"

Lian Hongxiu was also curious.

However, Lin Xun smilingly asked, "Do you really want to hear the truth?"

“Of course,” replied Lian Yuntian without missing a beat. He was already a little impatient to expose Lin Xun's sham.

“Your skills in smithing are strong and exquisite. The Emperor-grade treasures you’ve forged are all quite extraordinary...” Lin Xun spoke with discretion.

Lian Yuntian sneered inside. *Praises are useless if you can’t explain them in detail. Just wait, I’ll poke through your tricks face to face!*

“But it’s a pity,” Lin Xun sighed softly. “If you can’t tear through the karmic barrier in your heart soon, I’m afraid that your attainments in the art of smithing will stop here for the remainder of your life.”

“Karmic barrier?” Lian Yuntian frowned. “What is this supposed to mean?”

Lin Xun pointed at the display counter. “Look at these treasures that you handcrafted. They all have the same character and vibe. No breakthroughs, no changes anywhere; they all feel the same. This is a telling sign that you have been stuck in the same old rut and are even sinking deeper into it with time. I’m afraid that it’s going to be harder for you to make progress from here on than reaching the sky without cultivation...”

Hearing all this, Lian Yuntian was so embarrassed that he flew into a rage, “Nonsense! How could I possibly be stuck in the same old rut?”

Lin Xun’s smile showed his disapproval. “Then let me ask you, in the past eight thousand years, have you ever crafted one Emperor-grade tool that surpasses mythic-grade? To be more precise, can anything you’ve crafted outperform the ones displayed in this shop?”

Lian Yuntian was stumped.

“Eight thousand years, that’s not a short period of time, but these tools are already your best standard. Don’t tell me that...you really haven’t been stuck in the same spot?” Lin Xun concluded with a sigh, “If you don’t remove the barrier in your heart, Fellow Daoist, there is no hope for another breakthrough in your life. Take care.”

With that, he turned and walked out. Lian Hongxiu hastily followed suit.

Watching the whole thing, she completely agreed with Lin Xun's evaluation. He was absolutely spot-on, penetrating the key problem and laying out Lian Yuntian's predicament entirely!

A stupefied Lian Yuntian was rooted in place. He had deemed Lin Xun a scammer and had planned to expose the latter why he was unsuspecting.

Now, however, he was drenched in cold sweat, feeling as though he had been stripped naked with all of his secrets exposed.

After a while, he abruptly screeched, “Fellow Daoist Lin, wait!”

He hurriedly chased after Lin Xun as well.

Seeing Lian Yuntian catching up, Lian Hongxiu couldn't help but smile. *I knew this old fellow was skeptical before too, but look at him now, obediently running after the expert just like I am.*

At the same time, she became more and more curious about Lin Xun's identity. She had never heard there was such a character in the Celestial Phoenix World.

Who is he?

How did he come to possess such profound knowledge?

The grandmaster smith carried these questions in mind as the group arrived at Divine Forge Workshop A8.

Lin Xun's path was clear in the company of Lian Hongxiu and Lian Yuntian.

In the store, he repeated the process of looking through the Emperor-grade artifacts on display. As the saying went, ‘The more one sees, the more one learns. The more one compares, the more one comprehends.’ The crafting techniques Lin Xun deduced from these Emperor-grade artifacts as well as the miraculous effects that they produced immensely inspired him.

The mind sketch of his own life-bound Emperor weapon gradually became more specific.

Lin Xun felt rewarded. This trip had been worthwhile for him.

As a contented Lin Xun wanted to leave for the next Divine Forge Workshop, Lian Hongxiu suddenly said, “Fellow Daoist, the manager of this shop, Lian Feijia, is a seasoned grandmaster from the older generation of our clan. He is currently crafting an Emperor-grade artifact. Would you be interested in observing the process?”

Lin Xun was stunned. “Can I?”

From what he knew, getting disturbed was a serious taboo when one forged treasures on the level of the Emperor grade.

“Of course.” Lian Yuntian chuckled. “Please come with me.”[1]

He then led the way to the back of the workshop. After a series of turns, the end of the path was a small secret realm.

As Lian Yuntian took out a token and gently waved it, a portal noiselessly opened. The group filed in.

Rumble!

The world in the secret realm was as red as fire. A long river of magma flowed through, its rapid momentum raising thousands of fire waves and thunderous buzzes.

An ancient bronze furnace cauldron was suspended above the magma river, diffusing a powerful fluctuation.

In front of the bronze cauldron, an old man with unkempt hair and beard was sitting cross-legged. He seemed to have encountered a big problem, as could be seen from the hollow look in his eyes, his tightly locked brows, and his mouth that kept rambling about something.

From beginning to end, he never even noticed that Lin Xun's party had entered this space.

1. Yes the raws had Lian Hongxiu asking and Lian Yutian telling Lin Xun to follow him. ㊦

Chapter 2273 The Astounded Grandmaster Smiths

The old man with disheveled hair was none other than Lian Feijia.

Seeing his state, Lin Xun, Lian Yuntian, and Lian Hongxiu could tell that the blacksmith had encountered a problem in his current forging process.

Lian Yuntian coughed dryly.

Lian Feijia, looking as though he was caught in an endless trouble that he could not extricate himself from, suddenly trembled. He quickly turned his head and roared, "Who let you guys in!?"

There was fury and frustration in his voice.

"Brother Feijia, why do you seem so annoyed? Let me guess, did you run into difficulties? If you tell us about it, then maybe we can put our heads together and come up with a solution." Lian Yuntian walked up to him with a smile.

Lian Feijia grunted indignantly. "Come up with a solution? More like you're eager to make fun of this old man! Huh, who is this person? How could you bring an outsider into my private zone?"

His voice grew more and more displeased with each sentence.

Lian Yuntian hastily told him about what had happened through voice transmission.

After hearing the whole story, Lian Feijia was skeptical, but seeing Lian Hongxiu's and Lian Yuntian's attitude, he could only hold back his doubt.

Even if this strange man was a scammer, he was definitely no ordinary scammer if he could convince the two of them like this.

Lin Xun paid no attention to the trio's interaction. As soon as he had entered this secret realm, the bronze furnace cauldron suspended above the magma river had pulled his whole attention.

As he gazed at it, his eyes gradually took on a strange color.

Meanwhile, Lian Feijia got up and said, "These two told me that your attainments in smithing are out of this world, Fellow Daoist Lin. I wonder if you could give me some pointers?"

Lin Xun withdrew his gaze and said, "Sure."

His response startled Lian Yuntian and Lian Hongxiu. They had worried that Lian Feijia's move was out of pocket and might upset Lin Xun.

Who would have thought that he would agree so readily?

"Hah!" Lian Feijia laughed. He had asked that just to be modest and never thought that the other party would take it so nonchalantly.

It felt as though in a situation where everyone was exchanging courtesies, one person just had to take the praises seriously and in turn peeved the rest.

"Alright then, please have a look at this, Fellow Daoist Lin. How should I improve this Emperor artifact prototype so that it can hold over fifty-nine Emperor dao runes at once?" Lian Feijia said, pointing at the bronze cauldron.

A prototype shrouded in flowing dao light was floating inside it, flashing with a dazzling, colorful glow.

Mythic-grade Emperor artifacts were divided into upper, mid, and lower tiers. Only those with more than fifty-nine Emperor dao runes on them could be called upper mythic-grade.

Apparently, what Lian Feijia was forging was an upper mythic-grade Emperor artifact.

“Bring me the materials and rune diagram for this artifact,” said Lin Xun as he evaluated the prototype in its embryonic form.

Lian Feijia hesitated for a moment before he handed over a jade slip.

The forging of an Emperor-grade tool concerned various aspects. In this specific case, it was an armor that required over a thousand divine materials and to be branded by nine large rune arrays. Each of these arrays was comprised of around ten thousand separate runes.

Here came Lian Feijia’s problem. While Lian Feijia was capable of forging this treasure, he could only assure that its grade would be mid mythic at the highest. Trying to increase this by just one tier became the tricky part.

This treasure was being made on the request of an old friend, and Lian Feijia had guaranteed that it would be an upper mythic-grade Emperor armor. If he couldn’t solve the problem at hand, then this production would be doomed to fail.

For any blacksmith, failure was a frequent occurrence. Oftentimes when an order was made, the customer prepared multiple sets of materials in case the blacksmith failed.

Even a grandmaster smith might not be able to succeed every time.

Not to mention that the chances of failure were much greater when refining an Emperor-grade tool. Sometimes, the element of luck played an important part in the successful production of a superior Emperor-grade treasure.

Taking the jade slip, Lin Xun read it carefully and got the clear idea.

“How is it, Fellow Daoist Lin?” Lian Feijia asked with an interested look. He would like to see what this young man who dared agree to give him pointers had to say.

Lian Hongxiu and Lian Yuntian also looked at Lin Xun.

Lin Xun thought for a moment and said, “How many Emperor dao runes do you think can be drawn on an armor like this during forging?”

Lian Feijia snorted out a laugh. This kid even had the guts to quiz him!

He answered without having to think, “Considering the materials and rune diagram required for this armor, the most desirable result is sixty Emperor dao runes if it can be refined into upper mythic-grade. Any more runes than that and the armor will crumble before it can even take form.”

“Okay.” Lin Xun casually acknowledged and said, “Another question, how long does it usually take you to forge an upper mythic-grade Emperor tool?”

Lian Feijia tried to tone down the look of conceit on his face. “As long as the materials, the rune diagram, and the aeth flame are ready, I am eighty percent sure to succeed within a month!”

Lian Hongxiu and Lian Yuntian nodded. From their knowledge of Lian Feijia's smithing skill, they knew that he wasn't boasting.

“Okay.” Lin Xun went straight to the bronze cauldron.

“Fellow Daoist Lin, what are you doing?” Lian Feijia's heart tightened. The prototype in the cauldron was still in the gestation stage and could not tolerate the slightest damage. He was worried that Lin Xun was messing around.

Lin Xun didn't even turn his head as he said indifferently, “Didn’t you want my pointers? Just watch.”

The next second, he waved his sleeve.

Boom!

From the long river of magma, an endless flame surged up into the bottom of the bronze furnace cauldron, immediately sending it into operation with an exploding noise. On the cauldron’s surface, miraculous diagrams appeared with flowing dao light.

Seeing this, Lian Feijia frantically rushed up to stop Lin Xun, but Lian Yuntian and Lian Hongxiu tightly blocked his path.

Lian Yuntian quickly said, “My old bro, don't be impulsive. Let’s just see what Fellow Daoist Lin is capable of. Even if he fails, I'll compensate you in full with the materials.”

He had been dying to see Lin Xun's skills in practice. After all, someone who was all talk and no action was bound to make people feel unsettled.

Lian Hongxiu also chimed in, “Fellow Daoist Lin is not the reckless type. Both Yuntian and I are dying to know how profound his smithing mastery is.”

Lian Feijia's expression shifted for a while before he finally said indignantly, “Fine, I’ll listen to you. But let's get one thing straight: if he fails, you two will pay me back with all the materials!”

Lian Hongxiu and Lian Yuntian agreed without hesitation. As grandmaster smiths, which one of them wasn’t filthy rich?

Boom!

Lin Xun's sleeves flapped as his ten fingers made a gesture. Countless mysterious runes instantly appeared inside the cauldron, and as if alive, they densely covered the Emperor armor prototype from above.

A colorful drizzle of dao light filled the space with a special stunning beauty.

This skill that Lin Xun had executed so casually caused the three blacksmiths to stop breathing. They couldn't help but reveal shocked expressions.

In just seconds, nearly a thousand types of rune diagrams had been interpreted and laid out!

Moreover, there was even some kind of magical connection between them, full of life and spirituality as if it was a product of nature!

The trio exchanged looks and saw unconcealable astonishment on each other's faces. Then, in unison, they redirected their gazes to the cauldron with a completely different mentality.

Unlike how skeptical they had been about Lin Xun's skill before, the moment he had demonstrated his rune technique, they were unconsciously attracted and convinced.

Boom!

Above the steaming flames, the cauldron roared. Countless runes glowed in it, reflecting all sorts of phenomena. The runes then traced an unspeakably occult trajectory like an invisible hand was maneuvering them, and finally perfectly integrated into the prototype.

Lin Xun stood upright. The sleeves of his robe fluttered as his movements resembled drifting clouds and flowing water. From the gaps between his fingers, there seemed to be an invisible great dao power pouring out.

At this moment, he was like a god, interpreting the highest principles of runes!

Lian Hongxiu, Lian Yuntian, and Lian Feijia's eyes grew wider and wider. A look of passion and obsession slowly took over them.

If the big names in all Celestial Phoenix Nest saw them like this, their jaws would probably drop in shock.

After all, who of these three weren't world renowned grandmaster smiths who would be surrounded with respect and admiration wherever they went?

Yet, they currently resembled apprentices who had just started learning about smithing. With shocked, intoxicated, and fervent expressions, they were immersed in the skills displayed by Lin Xun.

As a matter of fact, only grandmasters of their caliber could fully understand how marvelous and inconceivable Lin Xun's performance was!

No one knew how much time had passed when a strange, rhythmic vibration resounded throughout the secret realm.

Jolted awake from their infatuation, the three grandmaster smiths saw a deep-red armor rising up from the cauldron. It was as dazzling and unparalleled as the rising sun, releasing a monstrous fluctuation of divinity.

The void around it was in disorder, seemingly unable to withstand the might of the armor!

The three grandmaster smiths froze on the spot and gawked like a miracle had just been born right before their eyes. They shivered uncontrollably in both body and spirit.

Was it a success?!

"But it's only been less than four hours, if I haven't lost track of time?" said Lian Yuntian dully.

Swish!

With a wave of his hand, Lin Xun put away the red armor. The furnace cauldron fell into silence.

"Around three hours, to be exact," Lin Xun corrected him and tossed the armor to Lian Feijia. "Have a look. What do you think?"

"Three hours..." Lian Hongxiu felt her head spinning and her mouth drying up. *Isn't that a little too fast?*

And Lian Feijia hastily caught the armor with both hands. After a quick survey, he quivered and squeaked, "A...a whopping sixty-nine Emperor dao runes!"

The next second, both Lian Hongxiu and Lian Yuntian looked like they had lost composure as well, rushing over to check the armor.

Upon seeing the sixty-nine Emperor dao runes meandering through the armor like dragons, their hands trembled uncontrollably.

It wasn't because they had seen too little in their life, but because they were fully aware what it meant for a piece of armor to have sixty-nine Emperor dao runes.

This meant it was the best of the best amongst upper mythic-grade Emperor armor!

Chapter 2274 Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor

When a treasure far exceeded those of the same grade in quality, it almost became a misfit and gained the word 'supreme' in its title!

'Supreme-grade' often meant that it was uncommon, rarely seen, and only attainable when the stars aligned.

Just now, Lin Xun had only used three hours to forge an armor that carried sixty-nine Emperor dao runes, which could be called a supreme-grade treasure among upper mythic-grade Emperor artifacts!

It took a long time for Lian Hongxiu, Lian Yuntian, and Lian Feijia to recover from their shocked disorientation.

With a look of shame, Lian Feijia bowed deeply. "Your smithing skills are nothing short of ingenious, Fellow Daoist Lin. We are ashamed of our inferiority!"

Lian Hongxiu and Lian Yuntian also voiced their thoughts one after another with heartfelt admiration and respect.

"Fellow Daoist Lin, you have convinced me, completely."

"There are actually godly experts like you outside of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan. To think that I've only learned this today!"

None of them had expected that Lin Xun could solve Lian Feijia's problem so easily.

Even wilder than their wildest dream was the fact that he had only used three hours to successfully craft an Emperor armor that Lian Feijia needed a month to make, with only eighty percent certainty at that.

Moreover, it was still a supreme-grade treasure in its ranks!

The more they carefully recalled and analyzed the techniques that Lin Xun had employed during the process, the more impressed they became. This new knowledge was enough for them to savor and study for a long time to come.

Strictly speaking, Lin Xun wasn't a blacksmith, but rather a rune master. However, this was precisely why rune masters were so terrifying.

In this world, anyone who could become a rune master was already an impeccable blacksmith, but not every blacksmith was a qualified rune master.

The reason was that blacksmiths didn't need to understand the principle of rune diagrams to refine tools accordingly.

Meanwhile, rune masters had to grasp the essence of each and every rune diagram. As a result, when it came to forging, they fathomed better than blacksmiths how to perfectly implement the rune diagrams on the artifact.

Simply put, there was an essential difference between the two.

“Can you tell me about this furnace cauldron?” Lin Xun pointed at the bronze cauldron.

Since this was not classified information, Lian Feijia immediately informed in a respectful voice.

“This is one of the nine blacksmith furnace cauldrons forged by our founding ancestor, Blacksmith Emperor. The rumor is that during a trip in the Kunlun Dominion, Blacksmith Emperor chanced upon the legendary Treasure Refining Origin Furnace and was deeply inspired by it. Thus, after returning from the Kunlun Dominion, he crafted the nine blacksmith furnace cauldrons based on it.”

Lin Xun's eyes flashed with realization as the information confirmed his suspicion!

The first moment he had seen the bronze furnace cauldron, he had almost thought that he was seeing the Treasure Refining Origin Furnace. However, he had realized that it was a different one after deeper inspection.

So it turned out to be a replica from the hands of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan's founding ancestor.

Lian Yuntian said, “Speaking of which, I actually know some behind-the-scenes story.

“Our founding ancestor attempted to seize the Treasure Refining Origin Furnace, only to find that the real thing had long crumbled and what was left was only a force of its spirit. Still, he didn't come back without harvest.”

Lin Xun asked, “And what was the harvest?”

Lian Yuntian, Lian Feijia, and Lian Hongxiu broke into smiles of joy and pride, and said in unison, “An Alpha Dao Fire that the Treasure Refining Origin Furnace had left behind!”

Then, they suddenly realized something and asked in surprise, “Have you never heard about this before, Fellow Daoist Lin?”

Lin Xun explained, “I'm not from this world.”

The three blacksmiths understood. No wonder they had never heard of Lin Daoyuan before. Just as they had suspected, he wasn't a native of Celestial Phoenix Nest!

Next, Lin Xun learned that the infinite sea of fire under Thousand Flame Imperial City was transformed by the Alpha Dao Fire left by the Treasure Refining Origin Furnace!

Almost everyone in the Celestial Phoenix World knew about this.

Embarrassingly, Lin Xun had only just come to Thousand Flame Imperial City for less than a day. How could he have found out about all this in such a short time?

He couldn't suppress his curiosity. "Such an Alpha Dao Fire should be incredibly precious. Aren't you worried that it'll invite thieves?"

The Lian blacksmiths explained some more, and Lin Xun finally learned that the Alpha Dao Fire from the Treasure Refining Origin Furnace possessed life and intelligence! As such, the Divine Forge Imperial Clan worshiped it as 'Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor'!

Lin Xun's heart tumbled as an uncontrollable idea sprouted in his mind. He asked, "Everyone, I wonder if I could meet this Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor?"

The three blacksmiths exchanged glances among themselves, all looking hesitant.

Lian Hongxiu explained, "Fellow Daoist Lin, you probably don't know this. The honorable Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor retreated into seclusion a very long time ago. Over these countless years, not even the old relics of our clan have been able to see the lordship even once.

"However, we can take you to sightsee the lordship's seclusion place."

Lin Xun said, "I would really appreciate that."

Lian Hongxiu laughed, "In fact, it's located in the secret realm of Divine Forge Workshop A1, which is also the deepest part of the fire ocean beneath Thousand Flame Imperial City. Even without us, you probably would still visit Workshop A1 anyway."

This reminded Lin Xun of his original plan. He thought for a moment and said, "In that case, there's no rush. Let's head to Workshop A7, then A6, A5... In that order."

The journey to the A-labeled workshops so far had provided him many inspirations. The concept for his life-bound Emperor weapon had become a little clearer in his mind.

He wanted to look some more and finalize a perfect blueprint.

Lian Hongxiu, Lian Yuntian, and Lian Feijia readily agreed to his plan.

They had only spent less than half a day with Lin Xun, but it had left them emotional and repeatedly shocked. Now that they had seen his clever forging techniques, they simply viewed him as a god and looked up to him like he was a tall mountain.

When mortals looked up at the sky, they would be overwhelmed by the endlessness of the stars and realize how insignificant they were.

This was the mentality they had when facing Lin Xun right now.

Divine Forge Workshop A7 was presided over by an old relic of highly lofty status in the Divine Forge Imperial Clan.

After hearing about Lin Xun's various deeds and seeing how convinced Lian Hongxiu, Lian Yuntian, and Lian Feijia were about his skills, this old relic seemed impressed and regarded Lin Xun as an honored guest, personally accompanying the latter and explaining to him about all the Emperor-grade tools displayed in Workshop A7.

Lin Xun of course understood the old relic's intention. In their conversation, he 'casually' pointed out some of the latter's small shortcomings in smithing, shocking the latter nonstop. At this point, the old relic finally started to believe that Lin Xun was an extraordinary expert in the profession.

When Lin Xun set out for Divine Forge Workshop A6, his company had gained another old blacksmith...

In this way, the group visited Divine Forge Workshop A6, A5, A4...one after another. With every arrival, they startled the Divine Forge Imperial Clan's big shot in charge of the place without fail.

All of them, after learning of Lin Xun's previous deeds, were astonished and skeptical.

However, Lin Xun didn't need to prove himself because Lian Hongxiu, Lian Yuntian, Lian Feijia, and a host of old relics would jump to advertise him in a 'brainwashing' fashion, using their own experiences for convincing proof.

Their fanaticism and reverence for him caused the big shots along the way to gasp and gawk in speechlessness. No matter how doubtful they were inside, they could only conceal it.

Lin Xun just stood and watched as this was exactly what he wanted.

He had intentionally pushed things in this development, all to prepare for his own life-bound Emperor weapon.

If he hadn't shown his skills and won the recognition of these Divine Forge veterans, how would he have the chance to meet the Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor?

Furthermore, he might need the help of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan themselves with the making of his life-bound Emperor weapon.

Lin Xun's strategy was straightforward: prove his ability by giving them guidance, so they couldn't bear to refuse him when he asked them for help.

Of course, this was a mutually beneficial plan and not one-sided exploitation. In fact, people like Lian Hongxiu and Lian Yuntian were immensely grateful for this!

If someone appeared to point out and guide you through a great obstacle in your cultivation, then this favor would be no different from the grace of rebirth!

By the time Lin Xun walked out from Divine Forge Workshop A2, he had been surrounded by a big group of old blacksmiths. All of them were pillars of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan, each having greater expertise in smithing than the last. Any one of them was a world-shaking grandmaster in Celestial Phoenix Nest, with countless dazzling halos on their heads.

Despite that, they were now following Lin Xun left and right, giving rise to uproars of shock when the group walked on the streets.

In truth, from the moment Lin Xun had entered Divine Forge Workshop A10 until this point, his journey had caused a big commotion in Thousand Flame Imperial City and gathered a great deal of attention.

After all, while he might look unfamiliar to the public, the old monsters of the Divine Forge Workshop that followed him around were more than famous enough to make up for it.

They had always been proud to the point of arrogance. It was difficult for even Emperor experts to seek their audience.

Currently, however, they were following a young man like his entourage, their expressions full of humility, admiration, and zeal. It was hard for such a bizarre team not to attract eyes.

Thousand Flame Imperial City was the number one city in the Celestial Phoenix World. Welcoming countless beings from various races from all corners every day, it was extremely prosperous.

The commotion raised by Lin Xun's group had spread almost immediately and piqued the interest of innumerable cultivators.

Even many of the major powers entrenched in the city were alarmed and had to conduct investigations.

Who was that young man?

What did he rely on to make those conceited grandmasters of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan flock around him like the stars surrounding the moon?

The news spread from one to ten, ten to a hundred... Before anyone knew it, it had already raised a storm in Thousand Flame Imperial City!

Therefore, when Lin Xun walked out of Divine Forge Workshop A2, he instantly noticed the crowd packing the streets in the vicinity. Every single spectator was wearing a look of curiosity, scrutiny, and dubiety.

Chapter 2275 The Progenitor Ancestor's Attempt at Nirvana

The sea of bustle-watchers was unprecedented. It looked like every citizen had spilled out into the streets.

Seeing such a scene, Lian Hongxiu and the other blacksmiths finally realized they had caused quite a commotion.

However, they paid it no mind because Thousand Flame Imperial City was under their clan's territory!

However, to their surprise, Lin Xun decided to call it a day and said that he would visit Divine Forge Workshop A1 tomorrow.

The group of blacksmiths were as unsatisfied as they were startled by this. Having followed Lin Xun all the way through his appraisal and the conversations, they had all more or less received some guidance.

Some old relics still had a mind full of questions that they would like to ask him, so how could they be happy to let him go?

However, seeing that Lin Xun had made up his mind, they could only stop here.

As Lin Xun sped back to the inn, those who wanted to track him were stunned to see him vanish in the blink of an eye, leaving no traces.

"Today's matter certainly will alarm the Divine Forge Imperial Clan. They probably will have calmed down when I go to Divine Forge Workshop A1 tomorrow."

Lin Xun sat down and relaxed in his room. After having caused such a stir in the city, he thought he would give the Divine Forge Imperial Clan some time to process it.

In this way, when they met again, it would be much easier to bring up ‘mutually beneficial’ matters.

“I wonder how it’s going on Luo Jia's side...” Lin Xun frowned.

With the Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos as the mastermind, the conspiracy against the Celestial Phoenix Lineage was definitely nothing to scoff at.

Since Lin Xun needed to borrow the road from the Celestial Phoenix Clan to return to the Ancient Nebula Road, he naturally didn't want anything to happen to them.

In the end, Lin Xun shook his head as it was useless to keep thinking about this. He had only arrived in Thousand Flame Imperial City for a day and knew next to nothing about the situation here. Even if he wanted to help, he wouldn’t know where to start.

The only thing he could do now was wait for more news.

Whoosh!

Lin Xun waved his hand, and a figure that looked to be around seven to eight years old appeared. The child was wearing a star-patterned feathered coat and a starry rainbow crown. He had an innocent face, and a pair of eyes as deep as the void and as clear as the star.

This child was the array spirit born within the Heaven Slaughtering Dao Severing array!

The birth of an array spirit was an event as divine as Creation itself. It was only possible when all three conditions were fulfilled: having the law power of heaven and earth as the source energy, having the essence of all things as the catalyst, and having the forbidden rune array derived to perfection.

Therefore, array spirits were extremely rare.

On top of that, this child before Lin Xun was the array spirit of the All-Heaven Fifth Array!

Lin Xun sized up the child and said, “Let's have a chat.”

The latter’s face was full of defiance. “Chat? What's there to chat about between us?”

Lin Xun raised his hand and knocked the child's forehead.

Grimacing, the child said angrily, “Don't think I don't know what kind of devious idea you’re up to. You want to subjugate me and become my master, but I'm telling you, there’s no chance!”

Lin Xun was stunned. “A feisty one, aren’t you? But you can relax. I sure don’t want a brat like you following me around.”

The child was irritated. “Who are you calling a brat?! In terms of age, I can be your ancestor's ancestor!”

Bam!

Taking another heavy knock on the forehead, the child teared up.

Lin Xun smiled sinisterly. “Mind your language, or I'll feed you to Big Yellow. That dog’s been dreaming about a plump and juicy little guy like you for a long time.”

The child shivered. Recalling the big yellow dog who had stared at him all day long with strings of drool coming out of its lips when he was imprisoned in the Dao Endless Pagoda, a chill ran through his little heart.

The child couldn't help but ask, “What exactly do you want?”

Lin Xun casually said, “Just something simple. In a while, I may need to set up an array to forge a weapon. How about you be my assistant?”

The child was stunned and blinked innocently, “Forging a weapon? But I don't know how.”

Bam!

He received another knock on his forehead and wailed in pain.

Lin Xun said, “I'll do the forging, you’ll set up the array. If you try to play dumb with me again, I'll make sure to let you experience first hand how hungry Big Yellow is.”

This was an array spirit that had lived for who knew how many years. Only an idiot would treat him as an innocent child.

Instantly, the child got on his best behavior and obediently nodded.

Lin Xun decided to give the other party a name. “From now on, let’s call you...”

The child hurriedly stopped him, “Wait, I already have a name!”

“My lead, my rules,” declared Lin Xun. “From now on, you are Little Five.”

Saying this out loud, he was even pleased with himself.

Nothing was more fitting than ‘Little Five’ to call the spirit of the fifth-ranked array in all the heavens.

The child was speechless.

What the hell kind of name is this?

I’ve lived for countless moons, guarding the True Dragon Clan and operating the Heaven Slaughtering Dao Severing array, I can kill Emperors and destroy Ancestors. With such might and majesty, how can you name me...Little Five?!

His little face darkened to the point it looked like the burned bottom of a pan. He didn’t even know where to start complaining from.

.....

The Celestial Phoenix Secret Realm was the dwelling place of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage. Just like the world of the Dragon Palace, it was full of vitality and beauty.

On the peak of Yuncang Mountain, there stood an ancient palace filled with chaos qi and a holy atmosphere.

At the moment, a group of high-ranking figures of the clan had gathered for a meeting.

“In a little while, the Venerable Progenitor will awaken from nirvana after eons of silence. As such, I hope that there will be no disturbance during this period that can possibly affect this critical occasion.”

The speaker was the head of the Celestial Phoenix Clan, Huang Cangtian. His voice resounded like a morning bell through the grand hall.

He was a remarkably handsome man. Whenever his eyelids moved, it was like drawing the curtains to a night sky of sun, moon, and stars. Just by sitting casually, he emanated the majesty of a monarch.

Feeling an upsurge of emotion, the crowd of elders present nodded in unison.

Barely anyone knew that the progenitor of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage, in order to break through to a new cultivation level, had begun an unprecedented attempt at nirvana a long time ago!

This was their clan's top secret.

Now, this attempt to undergo nirvana, which had lasted for countless years, was finally coming to an end!

The thought of their mighty progenitor coming back to rule the world made their hearts burn with anticipation.

“Things on the Divine Forge Imperial Clan's side also need to be monitored closely,” said Huang Cangtian on the throne.

An elder said without thinking, “You can rest easy, Patriarch. The Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor has been guarding the Venerable Progenitor’s attempt at nirvana since forever. Nothing unexpected will happen.”

Huang Cangtian mused, “Just pay close attention. For some reason, I have been feeling uneasy lately. I certainly do not want to see any mishap.”

The crowd of old relics were stunned. *Uneasy? Looks like the impending awakening of the Venerable Progenitor has been keeping the chief on his toes lately...*

“Patriarch, the Celestial Phoenix World is our territory. There won’t be any mishaps, please rest assured,” one of them laughed heartily and earned words of agreement from the others.

Huang Cangtian also laughed at himself, “Can't help it. Just imagining seeing the Venerable Progenitor making a comeback thousands of years later, it makes me...excited and nervous.”

Just then, a voice rang out from outside the great hall, “Patriarch! We have a big problem!”

A figure rushed in following that.

Everyone was visibly shocked as they recognized the newly arrived to be Luo Changfeng, a clansman with the Luo Clan's bloodline flowing in his veins.

This reminded them of the intimate relationship between the Celestial Phoenix Lineage and the Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos in the far past. For many years, there had been countless marriages between the descendants of the two clans.

Many Celestial Phoenix clansmen even bore the surname ‘Luo.’

However, after the incident of Luo Qingxun, this relationship had collapsed, and everything had changed.

In spite of that, the members surnamed Luo had not been implicated in any way. Since they had been brought up in the Celestial Phoenix Clan since birth, they didn't have much of a good impression of the Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos.

Furthermore, since the Celestial Phoenix Lineage and the faraway Luo Clan had severed all ties with each other because of Luo Qingxun, these clansmen who carried the Luo bloodline only approved of the Omega Lord and his descendants, not the current faraway Luo Clan.

They made this very clear.

Luo Changfeng was such a clansman. He was even put in charge of a part of the clan's authority and considered an elder-rank figure.

"What happened?" Huang Cangtian frowned as he remained on the throne.

Luo Changfeng took a deep breath to calm down and said, "This matter was a personal experience of my daughter Luo Jia. It's most appropriate that she reports this herself."

Huang Cangtian nodded. "Summon Luo Jia."

Soon after, Luo Jia walked in and saluted before relating what she had gone through.

Upon learning that the Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos was backing up the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans, the crowd of bigwigs in the hall flew into a rage.

"Conspiracy! This is definitely a conspiracy!" Some were infuriated.

"So to speak, the White Tigers and Black Tortoises have already started invading our territory in secret?" Some were shocked and alerted.

"Three months from now, an expert from the Luo Clan will come... What are they trying to do here? Why did they choose this time to act against us?"

"Could it be... News of the Venerable Progenitor's awakening was leaked?"

A commotion arose in the grand hall. The old relics of the Celestial Phoenix Clan all looked livid and unsightly.

On the throne, Huang Cangtian's expression also flickered dimly for a while before he muttered, "No wonder I've always felt uneasy lately. It turns out that...a storm is really coming..."

Very quickly, his calm and majestic bearing returned. His eyes were like electricity as they swept around the hall before finally landing on Luo Jia, "Girl, who is Lin Xun exactly?"

Luo Jia didn't dare to hide anything and said everything she knew about Lin Xun. However, she didn't know yet that his mother was Luo Qingxun.

Upon the part that Lin Xun had executed an eighth realm Emperor of the White Tiger Clan with one sword strike, a wave of gasps echoed in the hall.

“So he’s from the True Dragon Clan.” Huang Cangtian pondered for a moment and said to Luo Jia, “Tell your friend on my behalf that after this fiasco is resolved, I will personally open the passage to the Ancient Nebula Road and send him back myself.”

Chapter 2276 To Divine Forge Workshop A1

Luo Jia received the order with a delighted heart. This was a favorable result to deliver to Lin Xun.

On the throne, Huang Cangtian was displaying the decisiveness of a clan leader, giving three orders in a row without any hesitation.

“Starting now, all clansmen are to be thoroughly investigated. Seize whoever is under the influence of the Spiritbinder Parasite on sight!

“First Elder, take all available troops with you to Thousand Flame Imperial City and execute every single one found to be a member of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans!

“From today, the Celestial Phoenix Secret Realm is under lockdown. No one is allowed to leave without authorization. Any violation shall be severely punished!”

The three orders were loud and clear, causing the atmosphere of the hall to become austere.

Several old relics immediately retreated to bring them into action.

Everyone could feel the big storm that was about to rise today.

Luo Jia and her father Luo Changfeng also withdrew, leaving only a small group of the clan’s senior pillars and Huang Cangtian in the hall.

Only then did Huang Cangtian reveal a worried look. “The Luo Clan chose this exact occasion to send an expert from the other side of the cosmos here. Do any of you have a guess about their intention?”

One of the old relics replied with a somber expression, “Someone must have leaked the news that our progenitor is about to awaken and incurred this scourge!

“I’m sure none of us has forgotten how tragically the True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor was locked up for helping Luo Qingxun, while the progenitors of the White Tigers and

Black Tortoises chose to defect and left for the other side of the cosmos to cultivate at the Luo Clan.

“Only our progenitor didn’t make a choice, being in the middle of his attempt at nirvana. This time...I fear that the faraway Luo Clan plans to take advantage of the awakening juncture to force our Venerable Progenitor to take a side!”

The others also nodded as only such an explanation would make sense.

Suddenly, someone said, “There is another possibility. Perhaps the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans are fanning the flames and trying to achieve their goal through borrowed hands.”

Huang Cangtian asked, “Can you elaborate?”

The person explained, “Nowadays, of the Four Great Primordial Clans, the True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor has been imprisoned, our progenitor is in seclusion, and the White Tiger and Black Tortoise progenitors are serving the Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos. This makes us evenly matched in power.

“But once our Venerable Progenitor emerges stronger from nirvana, this balance will be broken. Given the True Dragon Clan’s friendship with us, they naturally won’t consider us a threat, but I’m afraid the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans don’t think this way.”

These words sent the group into contemplation.

It was common knowledge that the Celestial Phoenix Clan had severed all relations with the faraway Luo Clan due to Luo Qingxun. This was of course to adhere to the will of the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor.

If the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor awakened and learned that the White Tigers and Black Tortoises had been serving the faraway Luo Clan, how was it possible not to produce the heart of hostility?

With the new power after his awakening, the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor could indeed threaten the current White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans!

“Suppose this is the case, then their conspiracy probably won’t be that simple.” Huang Cangtian nodded with a grave look. “Tomorrow, I will head to the Divine Forge Imperial Clan to guard the Venerable Progenitor myself!”

The Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor, who had been silent in the deepest part of the fire ocean underneath Thousand Flame Imperial City, had been guarded by the Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan all these countless years.

This matter was only known to the core figures of the Celestial Phoenix Clan, as well as a handful of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan's old relics.

Now, however, Huang Cangtian was concerned whether it had been leaked...

.....

Meanwhile, in the Divine Forge Imperial Clan.

Patriarch Lian Jiuxiao, as well as a group of high-ranking members, were also having a meeting, only that the topic was related to one person.

Lin Daoyuan!

Everything that had transpired in the Divine Forge Workshops A10 to A2 had been reported to them. After recovering from the shock it gave, they all had one question.

Did Lin Daoyuan really come to our workshops just to appraise treasures?

Lian Jiuxiao suddenly said, "Hongxiu, you said Lin Daoyuan asked to meet Lord Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor?"

Lian Hongxiu nodded, "He did, but he doesn't strike me as someone with ill intentions. Both Yuntian and Feijia agree with me on this."

Lian Yuntian and Lian Feijia nodded.

Someone proposed, "Patriarch, no matter what Fellow Daoist Lin's end goal is, he will be at Workshop A1 tomorrow. We can just ask him then."

The others eagerly chimed in, "That's right. This old man would like to see just how extraordinary this fellow daoist's smithing skills are."

After much deliberation, Lian Jiuxiao nodded. "Very well, but all of you need to remain vigilant. In the case that Lin Daoyuan really has ulterior motives, we must not be fooled."

Everyone happily agreed.

.....

Today was destined to be uneventful.

Deep into the night, in a remote palace covered in heavy arrays.

There was not a single light in this palace. A group of figures was sitting in the quiet darkness, appearing incomparably mysterious.

“Today, our young master, Wu Fatian, as well as our Fourth Elder who was a seventh realm Emperor, were murdered...” a low and gloomy voice rang out.

“Humph! This also happened to our young master, Bai Shajun, and an important senior at the eighth realm!” someone else grunted.

“Could it be that the Celestial Phoenix Clan has gotten wind so they took action?” suggested another in a heavy tone.

“Impossible! Our pawns in the Celestial Phoenix Clan have not found anything unusual.”

“Still, today's matter has undoubtedly alarmed the Celestial Phoenix Clan. There's no surprise that Huang Cangtian will take action.”

“The Celestial Phoenix Lineage is already in the predicament. No matter what they do now, they can't salvage anything. When the expert of the Luo Clan arrives, our tribes will go all out!”

“In that case, I suggest we all lay low and try not to give away any traces.”

“That's indeed the right thing to do for now.”

The voices gradually faded into silence.

The hall remained pitch-dark as it always was, while those figures had already gone.

.....

The next morning, the sun was just right.

When Lin Xun left the inn, he found that although the streets were still bustling, the atmosphere had become tense and strict.

After some asking, Lin Xun learned that last night, the Celestial Phoenix Clan had mobilized big troops for a search and arrest all over Thousand Flame Imperial City.

It was said they were after some thieves.

Of course, Lin Xun knew that the so-called ‘thieves’ were people of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans!

“They reacted very quickly.” Lin Xun felt a little reassured. It proved that Luo Jia had reported back to her clan, and the matter had gotten the attention of the authorities.

This was good enough. Now that they were no longer kept in the dark, they would not be in a passive state.

While pondering, Lin Xun walked to Divine Forge Workshop A1.

“Brother Lin.”

He was halfway there when he saw Luo Jia coming toward him from afar in a long lavender dress. With features so stunning like they belonged in a painting, she attracted countless gazes along the way.

“You seem to be in a good mood,” Lin Xun greeted her with a smile. Since he still had the jade token Luo Jia had given him, it was in his expectation that she would be able to locate him.

Luo Jia nodded. “Our patriarch has agreed to open the passage and send you back to the Ancient Nebula Road after the current scourge is resolved.”

This was indeed good news, but Lin Xun perceived more than just the bright side of it and couldn't help but joke, “In other words, I won't be able to leave until this scourge is eliminated?”

“Eh...” Luo Jia was baffled for a good moment.

Lin Xun said, “I was just kidding. Besides, I'm in no hurry to leave anyway.”

Luo Jia asked, “Right, where are you going?”

Lin Xun casually replied, “Divine Forge Workshop A1.”

Luo Jia didn't expect this. She asked curiously, “To do what?”

Lin Xun didn't answer and instead asked with a smile, “Wanna come with and see for yourself?”

Luo Jia's face lit up with a smile. “As the host, how can I not accompany you to the end?” Her voice was soft and crisp.

When the two were a short distance away from Divine Forge Workshop A1, Luo Jia was stunned. *So many people!*

This area is completely packed. What is happening?

What took her even further aback was the figures of Lian Jiuxiao, the Divine Forge Imperial Clan's chief, as well as a sizable group of their big shots in front of the workshop. It was quite a spectacular sight.

Such an occurrence had always been extremely rare!

“Brother Lin, looking at the situation, I don’t think we can enter Divine Forge Workshop A1 today...” Luo Jia had just said this when she heard a clamor from the distant crowd.

“He’s here! Lin Daoyuan is here!”

“Look, that’s Lin Daoyuan, the expert that caused a sensation in the whole city yesterday.”

“He looks so young...”

Along with those voices, countless gazes landed on Lin Xun, which caught him off guard.

Luo Jia also froze. *What’s going on?!*

She had only just come out of the clan to look for Lin Xun at the first opportunity, so she hadn’t heard about the city-wide furor started by the man next to her yesterday.

Meanwhile, Chief Lian Jiuxiao, Blacksmith Lian Hongxiu, Lian Yuntian, Lian Feijia, and a bunch of other old monsters had started walking toward them.

They were still quite a distance apart, but the old relics already put on looks of enthusiasm and respect as they greeted Lin Xun.

“Fellow Daoist Lin, you’ve finally come.”

“This is our patriarch. After hearing about you, he immediately decided to come to see your dashing style for himself.”

“Right, these old geezers are all elders of my clan. I’ll introduce them to you one by one later.”

The air was lively as the group of grandmaster smiths, whose pride was so high it could reach the sky, ardently flocked up and exchanged pleasantries with Lin Xun.

Luo Jia entered a trance as she watched.

These old fellows of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan are always reserved and conceited even when dealing with the big shots of the Celestial Phoenix Clan.

But now, they are so friendly and respectful toward an outsider like Lin Xun!

What the heck even is this?

Before she could make heads or tails of this situation, Lin Xun led the befuddled Luo Jia into Divine Forge Workshop A1, all the while being surrounded by a group of Divine Forge Imperial Clan’s bigwigs and under countless onlookers’ eyes.

Chapter 2277 Approved by All And Sundry

Divine Forge Workshop A1 was exceptionally lively today, having the attention of many beings in Thousand Flames Imperial City on top of that.

The reason was curiosity. Everyone was dying to know about the young man that had the respect of a bunch of Divine Forge Imperial Clan old monsters.

Unfortunately, Divine Forge Workshop A1 would only receive Lin Xun today. Luo Jia was just piggybacking on him.

This actually added to the public's curiosity. It got all the spectators wondering who on earth Lin Daoyuan was.

The Divine Forge Workshop A1 was completely different from all the other stores Lin Xun had previously visited.

Walking into it, one would feel like they were in a small secret realm.

Every Emperor-grade artifact on display here was placed inside an array, making them seem very mysterious. Of course, they were bound to be immensely valuable.

Lian Jiuxiao personally introduced the origin of each artifact and the grandmaster smith who had crafted it to Lin Xun.

Lin Xun took it in his stride, not letting Lian Jiuxiao's important identity affect his mentality. His self-possessed demeanor earned secret nods of approval from many of the old relics.

During this, Luo Jia finally learned about some of Lin Xun's deeds yesterday. She was both surprised and proud of him.

Ever since she had gotten to know him, it seemed as though he would cause a stir wherever he appeared. His dashing elegance was impossible to conceal.

After all the artifacts in the shop had been appreciated one by one, Lian Jiuxiao asked with a smile, "Fellow Daoist Lin, what do you think of these Emperor-grade tools that our clan has crafted?"

All of a sudden, the conversations around them quieted down. All the old relics directed their gazes over at once.

Lin Xun was unperturbed. He commented, "Your clan's attainments in the art of smithing are worthy as the best in the world."

These words came from the bottom of his heart.

For a single ethnic group to beget so many dazzling blacksmiths, and for them to produce so many powerful, high-quality artifacts, this was already proof of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan's superb mastery in smithing.

However, it was apparent that this kind of praise wasn't what Lian Jiuxiao's group wanted to hear.

An old relic said, "Fellow Daoist Lin, can I ask for your advice on something?"

The rest of the group immediately showed interest. The asker wasn't simple at all. Named Lian Qingji, he was one of the only four great rune founders of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan!

There was an essential distinction between a great rune founder and a grandmaster blacksmith.

The title 'great rune founder' was not something that was given casually.

Therefore, an existence like Lian Qingji could be considered transcendent even in the Divine Forge Imperial Clan.

Everyone knew that Lian Qingji's asking for advice at this moment was actually a test in disguise.

"Of course," replied Lin Xun. Lian Hongxiu had already told him about Lian Qingji, so he was very clear how high the status of this old relic was.

However, when it came to his field of expertise, he had never been scared of anyone.

Lian Qingji took out a jade slip and handed it to Lin Xun, "Please take a look, Fellow Daoist Lin. This slip records a large-scale rune array that I've been researching and building for the last thousand years. But up until now, I still haven't been able to perfect it."

Several other elders revealed strange looks, seemingly not expecting that Lian Qingji would begin his test with an almost impossible problem!

They were all aware of how difficult and complex the rune array that Lian Qingji had been working on over the past thousand years was.

They had even participated in it, brainstorming and deducing together to try and help him perfect the array.

However, without exception, they had failed.

If it wasn't for Lian Qingji's status and sublime attainments in runes, they would have suspected that this array had been wrong from the start...

Lin Xun registered the expressions of the crowd, but did not think much about it and got directly to reading the jade slip.

Time trickled by. Everyone waited patiently.

After the time it took to savor a small cup of tea, Lin Xun withdrew his gaze from the slip.

“What do you think?” Lian Qingji asked with shining eyes, as if trying to gather clues from Lin Xun's expression.

Lin Xun remained silent.

Seeing this, the crowd exchanged looks as different ideas popped into their heads. *Lin Daoyuan is stumped already?*

Then again, they thought this made sense. How could a difficult problem that had been troubling the best experts in the Divine Forge Imperial Clan be solved so easily?

“Ninth Granduncle, you’re pushing Fellow Daoist Lin a little. Even we ourselves can't deduce it, so it's normal that he may get stuck as well.” Lian Jiuxiao smiled. “How about...we try a different question?”

They didn’t mind that Lin Xun was hampered in the first round. It acted like an invisible blow so that the other party wouldn’t have an inflated ego and underestimate their Divine Forge Imperial Clan.

“Asking a question that even your clan hasn’t been able to solve is not ‘pushing a little.’ More like you’re making things difficult for him on purpose,” Luo Jia couldn’t help but complain. Coming from the Celestial Phoenix Clan, she was not worried about offending anyone here.

The crowd looked a little awkward.

Lian Qingji, on the other hand, laughed bitterly, “It’s my fault. I shouldn't have been so rash to present this dilemma.”

With that, he apologetically cupped his fist toward Lin Xun.

Lin Xun was actually surprised. For an elder with such a supreme status to be able to treat an outsider with this kind of humility and courtesy, it was indeed a breath of fresh air.

After some deliberation, Lin Xun said, “You need not apologize, Fellow Daoist. Although this problem is a bit difficult, it is not unsolvable.”

These words shocked the whole room. *Did he really come up with a solution?*

Even Lian Jiuxiao was stunned. He couldn't help stealing glances at Lin Xun. *Is this young man...really so capable?*

“I hope for your guidance.” Lian Qingji’s eyes lit up.

Lin Xun organized his thoughts for a moment before recording the solution for the array into a jade slip, and then handed it to Lian Qingji.

When Lian Qingji read it, his pupils shrunk as a lightning-struck look appeared, and his face turned stark white like his soul had wandered off.

Seeing him like this, the others were agitated. *What is this situation?*

Lian Qingji muttered, “Does the change have to start from the core of the array?”

Lin Xun said, “If you don't change it from the base, then this array will never shape into the perfect form that you desire.”

This solution was undoubtedly proof that the original design had a major flaw. This was why Lin Xun had been silent, inwardly debating because he had worried that Lian Qingji wouldn't be able to withstand the blow.

For a renowned great rune founder, this was tantamount to a smack in the face.

However, Lian Qingji's expression indicated no embarrassment and anger. Instead, he continued looking through the slip after a moment of silence.

Upon completing it, he abruptly looked up and gazed at Lin Xun, and lamented with surprise and awe, “Fellow Daoist Lin is more than a level above me in terms of rune mastery!”

After saying that, he bowed deeply like a disciple bowing to his teacher.

His unexpected act shook everyone present!

Lian Jiuxiao, Lian Hongxiu, and the other old monsters of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan were all caught off guard and struggling to believe this scene.

Just what was recorded in the jade slip that made Master Lian Qingji so...out of control?

What they found most appalling was the implication in Lian Qingji's words. More than a level above him in runes? Then what kind of unimaginable adeptness had Lin Daoyuan reached?

Even Luo Jia hadn't expected the situation to take such a turn. Her beautiful eyes gleamed with a new light.

Lian Qingji didn't keep everyone wondering for too long. He passed around the jade slip to the other old relics present.

After reading it, they reacted differently but all in a vivid manner, either exclaiming in a high-pitch voice, mesmerized, marveling nonstop, or gasping...

For a time, the workshop resembled a lively bazaar.

When Lian Jiuxiao, the final person to see the slip, finished reading it, he sank into a long silence to calm the astonishment in his heart. Finally he said, "Fellow Daoist Lin's skills, we...are ashamed of our inferiority!"

Lin Xun smiled with perfect composure and without a hint of modesty, as too much modesty would turn into hypocrisy and conceit.

"Fellow Daoist Lin, can this humble old man ask you a question?" An old relic suddenly stepped out with eyes full of a desire to learn.

Seeing this, the others became anxious. They rushed forth and spoke in a chorus.

"Fellow Daoist Lin, I also have a problem that really needs your enlightenment."

"Fellow Daoist Lin, I too have..."

Besieged by a bunch of who-knew-how-old relics, Lin Xun was flustered. *These guys...are too enthusiastic!*

All decorum has been thrown out the window!

Luo Jia watched in amusement. Her face lit up as she chuckled and brightened the whole space.

In the end, it was Lian Jiuxiao who intervened and put a stop to it. Then, he looked at Lin Xun and asked, "Fellow Daoist Lin, I wonder if you've come to our workshop because you need help with something?"

As the leader of a clan, how could Lian Jiuxiao not have noticed that Lin Xun hadn't come here purely to display his abilities?

Lin Xun didn't hide it either. "I want to forge my own life-bound Emperor weapon, but I still lack some preparation and the right opportunity, so I would like a hand from your clan."

Upon hearing this, the eyes of all the old relics sparkled. *Forging his own life-bound Emperor weapon, he said?!*

Does this mean we can directly observe Fellow Daoist Lin's smithing skills in practice?

This is a great opportunity!

A fortune falling from the sky!

Even Lian Jiuxiao broke into a hearty laugh. Since this was the case, how could he possibly refuse?

He said with great bravado, “Whatever you lack, materials, aeth flame, furnace cauldron, manpower... You can just tell us, Fellow Daoist Lin. As long as it’s something the Divine Forge Imperial Clan can help with, we’ll provide it to you without complaint.”

As soon as those words were dropped, an old monster hastily stepped out as if worried that someone else would beat them to it, “I would like to assist Fellow Daoist Lin in this production, please fulfill my wish!”

“I as well!”

“Count this old man in!”

“Stand back, don’t compete, even I haven't said anything yet! How can I allow your hands on this precious opportunity? So, erm, Fellow Daoist Lin, can I be your assistant?”

The scene became chaotic. None of the old experts present were stupid. They knew very well that if they could work with Lin Xun to forge a life-bound Emperor weapon, they definitely would be able to gain immeasurable benefits in the way of dao runes!

Lian Jiuxiao's lips jerked. *These old geezers... They have always been so proud and conceited that it takes a lot of effort to ask a favor from them.*

But look what we have here, each and every single one scrambling to be an assistant!

What a scandal! Where are your manners?

If word of this gets out, what will the world think of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan?

At this thought, Lian Jiuxiao glared fiercely at the old timers and gave a dry cough. The next second, he turned to Lin Xun and said, “If you don’t mind, Fellow Daoist Lin, take me as well.”

There was expectation in his eyes and hope written all over his face.

The crowd was rendered speechless.

Chapter 2278 Into the Secret Realm

In the midst of this lively atmosphere, Lin Xun said, “I will not turn away your help and observation, but before we can start the crafting process, some preparations are needed.”

Lian Jiuxiao didn't skip a beat, “Just tell us what you need, Fellow Daoist Lin.”

Lin Xun contemplated before giving his reply, “I need to practice first, so if you have a custom commission, preferably one for an Emperor-grade artifact, I hope that you can let me try my hand at it.”

Since he had never forged an Emperor-grade tool before, something would likely go wrong if he ventured out to do so without any practice.

Moreover, practicing was also a process of building up momentum.

It was like how a fighter went into seclusion to adjust to their best state before a duel.

The same principle applied to smithing.

Hearing Lin Xun's request, the old monsters present became even more excited. They agreed in Lian Jiuxiao's stead without hesitation.

Him practicing could also be an opportunity for them to watch and study!

As for the right commission...

How could Thousand Flame Imperial City lack crafting commissions?

Of note, the commissions accepted by all the Divine Forge Workshops nowadays had already been scheduled into many years in the future!

“Also, I need some materials.”

As soon as Lin Xun brought this up, Lian Jiuxiao responded, “Fellow Daoist Lin, you can just make a list of the materials you need, and our clan will gather them for you. Even if it's something we don't have, we'll buy it for you!”

Generosity overload.

Lin Xun smiled and gave his thanks before making his third request, “If possible, I wish to meet the Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor.”

The hubbub instantly died out upon these words. Everyone looked at each other in disbelief.

Lian Jiuxiao sighed softly, "Fellow Daoist Lin, Lord Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor has been in seclusion for many long years. I'm afraid that this request..."

Lin Xun nodded. "I understand. Still, I hope you'll allow me to forge my life-bound Emperor weapon in the secret realm of Divine Forge Workshop A1."

The said secret realm was the most important area of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan, leading to the depths of the fire ocean under Thousand Flame Imperial City where it was possible to tap into the power of the Alpha Dao Fire.

Of course, from what Lin Xun knew, that was also where the Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor was secluded.

As long as he got to do the forging in that secret realm, he was confident that the target would show up to watch!

However, to Lin Xun's surprise, Lian Jiuxiao still looked hesitant in the face of this request, as though he was caught between a rock and a hard place.

Very few important elders knew exactly what the secret realm meant to their clan. Since the beginning of time, not a single outsider had ever been granted entry to it.

However, Lian Jiuxiao and they were unable to disclose the reason for this to Lin Xun.

Therefore, they were all hesitant.

The atmosphere in the shop instantly became quiet and heavy.

"If it's Fellow Daoist Lin, then it's possible," a voice suddenly rang out at the entrance of the room.

Everyone turned their heads and saw a majestic, extraordinarily handsome man clad in purple attire who had arrived at some point.

"Patriarch!" Luo Jia was stunned.

This person was precisely the leader of the Celestial Phoenix Clan, Huang Cangtian.

Lian Jiuxiao and the big shots of Divine Forge Imperial Clan were also flabbergasted. They hurriedly saluted and greeted him.

The Celestial Phoenix Lineage was the master of the Celestial Phoenix World. For countless years, the Divine Forge Imperial Clan had been dependent on it.

Despite this, no one had expected that Huang Cangtian, the esteemed overlord who was rarely seen outside, would actually show up in this Divine Forge Workshop today.

For a while, everyone was shocked and puzzled.

Huang Cangtian looked straight at Lin Xun and said with a smile, “You must be the one Luo Jia has been talking about, Lin Xun. I thank you for your act of righteousness yesterday, which also brought to light very important news for our clan.”

Lin Xun cupped his fist. “It's nothing that deserves mentioning.”

He then retrieved the token with the True Dragon Clan insignia that Ao Xingtang had given him and presented it to Huang Cangtian. “This is my token, please verify it, Senior.”

Huang Cangtian was Luo Jia's elder, so it was only reasonable for Lin Xun to address him as a senior.

“Luo Jia has already told me everything about you, so with or without tokens, it doesn't matter.” Huang Cangtian smiled, but after accepting the token and having a quick look at it, his eyes abruptly changed, and he just froze there.

Because the letter sealed inside that was written in Ao Xingtang's own handwriting talked about Lin Xun's origin in detail!

Seeing Huang Cangtian's slightly perturbed expression, Lian Jiuxiao's group was suspicious. *Is there something off about this Lin Daoyuan?*

Lin Xun, on the other hand, had a vague guess that Ao Xingtang's letter had probably revealed his true identity.

Only after a long time did Huang Cangtian put away the letter and say with a complicated look, “I understand your situation, Little Friend. Moving forward, the Celestial Phoenix Clan will satisfy any demand you have, as long as it's within our capability.”

He didn't announce Lin Xun's identity since it was too sensitive!

Currently, many powerful experts of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans were lurking in Thousand Flame Imperial City. It would trigger an unpredictable storm if those people found out who he really was!

Lin Xun only needed to think briefly to understand Huang Cangtian's intentions. He cupped his fist again. “Thank you truly, Senior.”

At this point, the group of Divine Forge Imperial Clan elders also reckoned that Lin Xun's identity was far more complicated than they had imagined!

“Fellow Daoist, is it really possible to let Fellow Daoist Lin in that secret realm for crafting?” Lian Jiuxiao had to reconfirm.

“Yes.” Huang Cangtian chuckled. “Should you all lack anything during this, the Celestial Phoenix Clan will provide it to you!”

Lian Jiuxiao’s group perked up.

“If the Celestial Phoenix Clan needs anything forged, I can help,” Lin Xun added.

Since he was going to practice anyway, it didn’t matter who the customer was.

Huang Cangtian beamed. “Then let me thank you in advance, Little Friend.”

Before this, he had seen the way Lian Jiuxiao’s group treated Lin Xun. A character who could make the Divine Forge Imperial Clan bow to him was destined to be an uncommon expert in smithing. How could someone like Huang Cangtian fail to see that?

“Fellow Daoist Lin, when do you plan to start?” Lian Jiuxiao looked at Lin Xun.

“If I have to choose a day, today might as well be it,” said Lin Xun.

The crowd was energized and delighted. They had long been impatient to see Lin Xun's techniques.

Right away, Lian Jiuxiao led the way, taking everyone to the secret realm of Divine Forge Workshop A1.

Huang Cangtian did not join in the fun. Watching Lin Xun leave while being tightly surrounded, a surge of emotion wash through him.

Back then, because of Luo Qingxun, the Celestial Phoenix Lineage and the Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos had broken off all relations.

Now, Luo Qingxun's son had come and unveiled a conspiracy against the Celestial Phoenix Clan.

It was like a good karma had finally borne fruit at the perfect moment.

“White Tigers, Black Tortoises, Luo Clan...” Huang Cangtian's eyes became unfathomable as he sank into a long contemplation.

.....

Rumble~ Rumble~

Churning waves of fire rose up to the skies like eye-piercing dragons, stirring up the atmosphere and emitting scorching hot currents that boiled mountains and rivers.

Flickers of incomparably rare divine aeth flames in red, green, black, silver, gold...could be seen from time to time.

This place resembled a kingdom of flames. If not for the heavy restrictive power permeating the space, ordinary cultivators wouldn't be able to take a step into it.

This was naturally the most central and forbidden part of Divine Forge Workshop A1 – the Secret World.

In the center part of this world, there was an arena that covered a hundred thousand square feet.

In the center of the arena stood a bronze cauldron with a jade-like luster and misty dao light steaming at the mouth. It gave off an ancient aura.

From Lian Jiuxiao's brief explanation, Lin Xun learned that this arena was the deepest part of the fire ocean under Thousand Flame Imperial City.

The cauldron in the center was the first furnace cauldron that their founding ancestor, Blacksmith Emperor, had forged based on the Treasure Refining Origin Furnace after he had returned from the Kunlun Dominion.

It might have started out as a replica, but today, it had already become a crucial artifact of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan, recognized by them as their number one furnace cauldron.

Lian Jiuxiao proudly introduced the place to Lin Xun, "Have a look around, Fellow Daoist Lin. This world is home to more than thirteen hundred types of aeth flames. Among them, there are nineteen types that are top-ranked in all heavens.

"This is the result of countless years of hard work, for members of our clan have searched far and wide to gather them. I'm not exaggerating when I say that there is no other place in all worlds that possesses so many aeth flames."

The old relics around repeatedly nodded.

"Spectacular indeed." Lin Xun was also in constant amazement. The world in front of him was certainly an eye-opener. He figured it was a fitting place to craft his life-bound Emperor weapon.

Hmm?

Suddenly, Lin Xun's eyes gleamed strangely. In his possession, the copper piece that had been a part of the Treasure Refining Furnace was producing a strange fluctuation, as if it had sensed something.

Almost at the same time, Lin Xun keenly felt a strand of spirit scanning him, and it seemed to come from the dark areas of this world.

Although it had only happened for a split second, he was certain that it was not an illusion!

"Is it you...?" The name 'Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor' surfaced in his mind.

However, when he was about to carefully perceive it, the copper piece returned to silence as if its sense had been cut off.

Lin Xun smiled. He didn't mind it, knowing that once he started smithing here, the so-called Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor sooner or later wouldn't be able to resist coming out to meet with him.

"Fellow Daoist Lin, this is a commission from an elder of the Green Python Imperial Clan to make a lower mythic-grade Emperor weapon." An elder came and gave Lin Xun a jade slip. "See if it works for you."

Lin Xun took a brief look and nodded. "It does."

Immediately, the materials needed for this commission were delivered, in three sets at that in case of failure.

"If there are left-over materials after the item is crafted, will they be returned to the customer?" Lin Xun couldn't help but wonder.

"No way," said the group of old smiths in unison before they all burst out laughing.

This was a rule that had been passed down since time immemorial. Even if the production was successful in one attempt, the remaining materials would still go to the blacksmith.

Why were the world's blacksmiths so rich?

It was precisely because not only could they receive payment for making the item but they could also make huge profits with any leftover divine materials!

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that if one had a blacksmith friend, then one wouldn't have to worry about cultivation resources for the rest of their life.

This new knowledge made Lin Xun emotional. He remembered something that Mister Lu had once said when he had been young: What slipped from the gaps between the fingers of a rune master was an inconceivable amount of wealth to the normal people.

Chapter 2279 Toning It Down a Notch

The payment for crafting an Emperor-grade item could not be measured in everyday currencies.

More often than not, the blacksmith would receive unthinkable favors in addition to a generous remuneration.

This was to be expected since most users of Emperor-grade artifacts were Emperor experts. How could the value of a favor from an Emperor be calculated with money?

Over infinite years, the Divine Forge Imperial Clan had created innumerable Emperor-grade tools for all the clans in the Celestial Phoenix World. One could only imagine how heavy the favors they had accumulated were!

Moreover, it was known to all that they were under the command of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage, so those favors definitely would be credited to the latter.

Suffice to say, the Divine Forge Imperial Clan had been a big contributor as to why the Celestial Phoenix Lineage had been able to reign over all races and become the overlord of this world.

In the secret realm of Divine Forge Workshop A1, the commission, materials, and furnace cauldron needed were ready. The group of old relics were all gazing at Lin Xun with anticipation.

After organizing his thoughts, Lin Xun began.

He waved his sleeve.

Boom!

A divine aeth flame that had been flickering in the far, dark horizon was pulled down, dropping into the cauldron at the center of the arena.

In an instant, the flame steamed and the cauldron rumbled.

“Violet Yang True Flame?” An old relic was visibly surprised because this aeth flame was not among the top rankers.

Many revealed pondering looks.

This commission was to make a Long Serpent Spear for an elder of the Green Python Imperial Clan, and the lower mythic-grade was already enough.

Rustle~

Before the crowd of old monsters could figure out the intention behind this choice, Lin Xun waved his hand. Dozens of the materials surged toward the cauldron in a torrent.

Right that instant, the Violet Yang True Flame tumbled and whisked those materials into the cauldron, melting them in the process. This produced bursts of eye-catching, colorful sparks.

This was melting the materials into one, which would enable the artifact prototype to form.

There was nothing special about Lin Xun's performance. The only praiseworthy part was perhaps how smooth and magically rhythmic his movements were.

All of the old blacksmiths present were confident that they could do this as well.

“I’m afraid it would take several days to completely melt these materials with the Violet Yang True Flame,” someone analyzed with a thoughtful look.

Up until this point, they were still confused as to why Lin Xun hadn’t selected a better aeth flame instead of the current one.

However, they would soon understand.

Lin Xun’s fingers danced, and a black flame in the sky jumped into the cauldron like a long comet.

“Black Yin Cold Flame!” someone exclaimed.

Boom!

In the cauldron, the Violet Yang True Flame and the Black Yin Cold Flame intertwined until they were inseparable but clearly distinct like Yin and Yang. In the process, they generated thunderous explosions that shook the region.

The terrifying energy sent the old relics into a cold sweat, almost thinking that Lin Xun had gone crazy. These two aeth flames repelled each other like water and fire. They could not be fused at all.

No blacksmith in history had dared try making these two divine flames coexist in one furnace.

However, everyone present was dumbstruck by what happened next.

As the two flames collided with each other nonstop in the cauldron, the dozens of divine materials caught between them got decomposed at an incredible speed.

Just fifteen minutes later, the materials had transformed into a pure, beautiful, colorful liquid that emitted a precious sheen.

Meanwhile, Lin Xun leisurely threw a few more materials into the liquid, melting them next...

The audience immediately became restless. Looking at each other, they all revealed expressions of epiphany.

“It turns out that materials that take days to process can be melted in a short time with the collisions between different aeth flames. Why have we...never considered this technique before?” mumbled an old relic.

“No, we actually have, it’s just that our attempts all fell through. After all, we have over a thousand aeth flames of different qualities and intensities. Plus, the materials required to make each tool are different, so the smallest error during the melting phase can lead to failure,” another lamented.

“For Fellow Daoist Lin to be able to adopt this unique method, he must have a thorough understanding of the properties and nature of those materials.”

“I agree, this must be the case.”

The old smiths exchanged ideas as they observed, feeling that they had benefited a lot.

In the audience, Lian Jiuxiao took out a jade slip and began to record what he saw intently. His serious manner resembled that of a diligent student who was taking notes in class.

This made an old relic quite confused. “Patriarch, it's just a melting technique, nothing too shocking. Why are you recording it so carefully?”

Lian Jiuxiao didn't even look up as he replied, “The production has only just begun, yet Fellow Daoist Lin has already done something beyond all of our expectations. You really don’t think this isn’t worth taking seriously?”

Hearing this, everyone was ashamed.

After finishing recording, Lian Jiuxiao continued with a serious expression, “This opportunity is invaluable, so don’t just focus on watching. Instead, carve everything into

your mind and analyze them deeper one by one. Only in this way will our Divine Forge Imperial Clan have hopes of making further breakthroughs in the art of smithing.”

The crowd of old relics all collected themselves and nodded solemnly.

Luo Jia was dumbfounded as she watched all of this. At the moment, Lian Jiuxiao’s group looked no different from a group of students who were starving for knowledge, so pious, so earnest...

If the world knew about this, how could they even register it?

She redirected her gaze to the distant Lin Xun, who looked otherworldly standing in front of the cauldron. Once in a while when he moved, his sleeves fluttered in an elegantly unrestrained and relaxed manner.

Even Luo Jia had to admit that the serious and focused Lin Xun exuded an indescribable charm that other people couldn’t help but be attracted to. Even when merely watching him work from afar, one wouldn’t find it boring or dull.

Boom!

Four hours later, the total of nearly five hundred divine materials had been fully melted. The result was a magnificent and colorful liquid that steamed and rolled in the fiery cauldron.

It was also at this moment that Lin Xun began to imprint the dao rune arrays.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

In accordance with his thought, countless runes whistled out like a school of fish and criss crossed each other, outlining one array after another. In a miraculous fashion, the arrays enveloped and embedded themselves into the material liquid in the cauldron.

“Hm? The prototype hasn’t yet completely shaped, but he’s already laying out the arrays?” Many old monsters were surprised, fixating on Lin Xun's every move.

Generally speaking, following the melting of materials was refining the prototype, and only then could the dao rune arrays be engraved on the prototype.

The current situation was that Lin Xun had set aside the second step and gone straight to arranging the arrays on the liquid. This took quite a few old relics by surprise.

On the other hand, many were sunk in thought as they perceived something novel and marvelous. Since the material liquid had no fixed form, setting up arrays in it was a most difficult task.

To make an analogy, it was plain sailing to sketch on a static canvas, but if the canvas was constantly moving and changing, then one could imagine how challenging it was to draw on.

The old smiths present had all tried forging in this way, but only on treasures under the Emperor-grade because it was easy to maneuver.

However, it was a completely different story when it came to Emperor-grade treasures. The level of difficulty wouldn't just double!

All in all, even a great rune founder such as Lian Qingji would never employ this method because it was too easy to make mistakes and fail.

“Although this method is intractable and extremely prone to errors, a success guarantees an Emperor artifact of extraordinary quality!” Lian Jiuxiao's remark was approved by everyone.

The only question was, would Lin Xun succeed?

When this same thought popped into their minds, the crowd saw the total of eighty-one large rune arrays completely integrating into the divine liquid inside the cauldron, producing a shocking change.

Boom!

Divine hazes erupted like rain, unleashing billions of rays of light in a deafening noise.

A matchlessly powerful and intimidating energy quietly permeated the cauldron. Immediately afterward, a treasure light swept out like a rainbow.

All the onlookers felt a stinging sensation in their eyes. When their visions cleared up again, they saw a thirteen-foot long Serpent Spear floated out from the cauldron in the air. The surface of the weapon's body shone with a watery luster, its tip spewing a frighteningly cold aura.

The void around it creaked and collapsed, seemingly unable to withstand the terrifying might it emanated.

Success!

Lian Jiuxiao and the other old relics of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan all gawked with eyes widened and faces lathered with shock.

With their eyesight, how could they not tell that it had not only succeeded but was also a weapon of extraordinary power?

An Emperor-grade treasure could only enter lower mythic-grade when it had at least nine Emperor dao runes.

The spear Lin Xun had forged had forty-eight Emperor dao runes, just one short of reaching mid mythic-grade!

Such an artifact was often considered a supreme-grade product in its tier!

“It's only been less than six hours, right?” An old relic trembled.

In such a short period of time, not only had Lin Xun succeeded in crafting the order, but it was also a supreme-grade weapon at that. Such skill completely went beyond their expectations.

Previously, Lin Xun had helped Lian Feijia forge a supreme upper mythic-grade Emperor armor, but that was already a semi-finished product, and what he had done was only to solve the problem with arranging the rune arrays.

This production, however, was entirely different. From melting the materials to setting up the rune arrays, to finishing the weapon, everything had taken less than six hours. This kind of speed was appalling to say the least!

“What a pity.” Lin Xun's soft sigh suddenly came from the distance, startling the crowd of shocked smiths.

A pity?

What does that mean?

Lian Jiuxiao couldn't help but ask, “What is a pity, Fellow Daoist Lin?”

Lin Xun gazed at the freshly crafted Long Serpent Spear, his voice carrying a hint of helplessness, “I'm capable of making a mid mythic-grade weapon with the original materials, but the commission requests it to be lower mythic-grade, so at the last moment, I ended up toning it down a notch.”

Hearing this, the lips of all the old relics twitched violently, and their faces turned into a funny spectacle.

Chapter 2280 Triggering a City-Wide Sensation

Toning it down a notch?

Why on earth would you do that?

Who would hate for their Emperor-grade weapon to exceed the expected quality?

However, Lian Jiuxiao's group was powerless to refute because Lin Xun's words were justified.

Yes, this was the request of the customer!

Moreover, what he had crafted was a supreme-grade artifact in its tier, which was more than enough to make the customer hoot for joy inwardly...

"Everyone, have you memorized every detail of the production?" asked Lian Jiuxiao.

The crowd of elderly smiths around all nodded.

"Very good," said a pleased Lian Jiuxiao before he turned to Lin Xun. "Fellow Daoist Lin, do you want to take a short rest?"

He wanted to strike the iron while it was hot and ask Lin Xun the questions that had occurred to him while he had been observing the production just now.

"I'm fine, let's keep going." Lin Xun had checked his physical state. The previous production had used less than a fifth of his strength, so he could still continue.

Moreover, this commission could only be considered a warm-up, having only displayed a small part of his total ability.

"Eh..." Lian Jiuxiao was a bit surprised, but he immediately gave an order to fetch another commission for Lin Xun.

.....

At the same time, Thousand Flame Imperial City had broken into an uproar.

"The mysterious dao rune founder has graced Divine Forge Workshop A1 with his presence. His dashing charisma has all the big names of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan enchanted!"

"Latest news, the name of this mysterious blacksmith is Lin Daoyuan, and his mastery in runes is unheard of! In this esteemed visit, he is going to forge his own life-bound Emperor weapon!"

"Lin Daoyuan is the first outsider since the beginning of time to enter the Secret World of Workshop A1!"

A string of news traveled through Thousand Flame Imperial City like a thunderclap, triggering an unprecedented uproar.

In the Celestial Phoenix World, who didn't know that the Divine Forge Imperial Clan was the best when it came to smithing?

However, this person called Lin Daoyuan had won their recognition with his skills. This was too incredible!

“The Divine Forge Imperial Clan is so proud of their specialty in the craft, but they were actually convinced by an outsider. What kind of godly expert is Lin Daoyuan...?”

Many major organizations were alarmed and dispatched manpower to investigate.

For a time, a sea of people packed every inch of Divine Forge Workshop A1's vicinity.

The extravagant bustle startled even Huang Cangtian, who had decided to personally watch over the workshop during this period. He immediately issued an order to mobilize a large number of experts from the Celestial Phoenix Clan over, so they would keep the peace from the shadows.

He suspected that the spies of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans would also be attracted here. After all, this commotion was too big. Anyone with a proactive attitude would come to check it out for themselves.

If he could take advantage of this opportunity to weed them out one by one...

Then why not?

At this thought, Huang Cangtian figured that this situation might just work in his favor. His clan's Venerable Progenitor had been secluded in the deepest part of the fire ocean under Workshop A1. The greater the stir caused by Lin Xun, the more people it would draw over, which in turn became an invisible camouflage for distraction.

At the very least, if the forces of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans killed their way to this place, the sea of cultivators in the neighborhood...would act as a natural barrier!

.....

Later that evening, Elder Mang Tong of the Green Python Imperial Clan hurriedly arrived with some confusion.

He had just been informed that his order at the Divine Forge Workshop had been successfully completed, which greatly surprised him.

After all, when he had registered this commission, he had used various connections and made many promises until the workshop had finally agreed to complete it within three months.

Mang Tong was already satisfied with this result. As far as he knew, some current custom orders for Emperor-grade artifacts might have to wait over ten years!

Therefore, he had never dreamed that he would receive news of his Emperor-grade weapon being completed only half a month later!

This was certainly an unexpected delight.

Upon arriving outside Divine Forge Workshop A1, Mang Tong was surprised to see the incredibly lively sea of people in the neighborhood despite that the sky was getting dark.

In a single glance, he spotted many Emperor experts of major powers!

After asking around, Mang Tong found out that the cause of this big commotion was a mysterious figure named Lin Daoyuan.

“Brother Mang Tong, quickly go in there and receive your artifact. It’s said that Lin Daoyuan only spent less than six hours making it for you,” urged an Emperor acquaintance of Mang Tong with curiosity. “Let us have a look once you get it and open our eyes.”

Many people chimed in, “Yes, please! We are all eager to know how proficient Lin Daoyuan is to make the Divine Forge Imperial Clan's admire him so much.”

Mang Tong agreed in a hurried manner and entered Divine Forge Workshop A1.

Shortly after, the crowd around the shop saw him walking out.

However, he was wearing a dazed look, as if he had dropped his soul somewhere. This was quite unusual.

Someone couldn't help but ask, “Brother Mang Tong, what happened?”

Countless intrigued gazes landed on Mang Tong in unison.

Mang Tong remained in a long stupor, then suddenly laughed up at the sky, “Hahahaha, it's been a worthwhile trip! As for my Emperor-grade weapon... Heheheh, I can only tell you that it’s completely beyond my expectations!”

After saying that, he strutted away.

His exuberant, complacent, and emotional reaction, however, was deeply imprinted in the minds of everyone present.

Many even cursed inside. *Damn this old fogey, leaving us with a cliffhanger!*

Nevertheless, Mang Tong's behavior still caused a stir in the area. There was no doubt that Lin Daoyuan's smithing skills were extremely impressive. But how impressive exactly, no one else knew.

The crowd became even more curious, to the point they were itching to do something.

Perceiving this scene from a hidden corner, Huang Cangtian suddenly had an idea.

He ordered, "Go and quickly spread news of today's matter. I want the entire Celestial Phoenix World to know that a divine blacksmith named Lin Daoyuan is currently staying at Divine Forge Workshop A1!

"Make sure to describe Mang Tong's reaction in detail. He is a living example, don't waste it."

His subordinate replied, "As you command!"

On this same day, the Celestial Phoenix Clan mobilized people to deliver the news to the various territories across the world, spreading it at an incredible speed.

Overnight, Lin Daoyuan's name resounded throughout the Celestial Phoenix Nest!

Thanks to the Celestial Phoenix Lineage secretly fanning the flames, numerous old Emperor monsters living in all parts of the world were informed. They immediately departed for Thousand Flame Imperial City.

To characters of their level, Emperor-grade artifacts posed a fatal attraction.

Especially, a blacksmith who could make the Divine Forge Imperial Clan bow in acknowledgement, and who could refine an Emperor-grade weapon in just over five hours, was impossible for them to ignore.

Therefore, in the short span of a few days, the number of Emperor experts in Thousand Flame Imperial City had skyrocketed, and it only continued to increase as time passed...

The neighborhood of Divine Forge Workshop A1 had become the most popular area in the city. Here, one could sight Emperor figures everywhere, which was something that sounded far-fetched in the past.

This grand scene was unprecedented!

Huang Cangtian couldn't be more pleased with how this had turned out.

The calamity plotted by the White Tiger, Black Tortoise, and faraway Luo Clans had put the Celestial Phoenix Clan under a great pressure.

Now, however, Emperor experts from all over the Celestial Phoenix World were coming to Thousand Flame Imperial City in droves. Divine Forge Workshop A1 had even become a tourist attraction for them.

Under these circumstances, if the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans wanted to carry out an invasion, then they would have to weigh the consequences again!

“Lin Xun is really a blessing for our clan...” lamented Huang Cangtian. He had never thought that Lin Xun's appearance could lead to this kind of commotion.

Meanwhile, Lin Xun was oblivious to everything happening outside.

He was focused on practicing. Several years had passed since he had stepped into the Emperor Stage and decided that he would forge his own life-bound Emperor weapon.

During these years, he had contemplated over and over again what kind of form it should take to be best suited for his cultivation path.

It was only in Thousand Flame Imperial City, after he had seen the various forms and wonders of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan's Emperor-grade tools, that Lin Xun had slowly come up with a specific idea.

Reaching this point, his current practice was nothing more than a preparation to make his life-bound Emperor weapon.

Boom!

The ancient bronze cauldron rumbled as the resplendent aeth flame burned furiously. Countless dao runes tumbled inside the cauldron, reflecting all sorts of divine phenomena.

Lin Xun stood there, his sleeves dancing. His expression was calm and concentrated.

Some distance away, the veterans of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan were watching him unblinkingly. Their faces were filled with hunger for knowledge.

Four days had passed, and under their very eyes, Lin Xun had successfully crafted nine lower mythic-grade and three mid mythic-grade Emperor-grade artifacts.

On average, he had produced three Emperor-grade treasures every day.

No attempts had ended in failure.

Every completed product was at the supreme-grade.

None of them had failed to surpass the expectation of the audience!

For Lian Jiuxiao's group, they had received too much shock and amazement in the last four days, and they had lost their composure many times for this reason.

They had only been convinced by Lin Xun's skills before, but at this moment, they were treating him with fervent respect and admiration!

They had finally understood what it meant for someone to seize the miracle of Creation, what it meant for a product to be so high-quality that it resembled nature itself, and what it meant to have a godlike grasp on dao runes!

It was no longer possible to describe their feelings in words. They had transformed into the most devout, studious, focused, determined, and hardworking scholars. They dared not have any distractions present, lest they miss an invaluable insight.

Even the great rune founders like Lian Qingji were no exception.

As for Luo Jia, she felt as though all these old relics of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan had been possessed. They were completely obsessed and immersed in Lin Xun's smithing techniques.

When she looked at Lin Xun again, for the first time, it occurred to Luo Jia how wide the gap between her and this good friend of hers had become, even though it had been only a few decades.

He even felt out of reach, and that she could only look up at him.

During the last four days, from the darkness of this secret realm, a mysterious spirit had occasionally appeared and watched Lin Xun from afar as he forged.

However, it would disappear soon after and was always unnoticeable.

Even Lin Xun, who had been immersed in his work, never caught the spirit peeking.

Meanwhile, in Thousand Flame Imperial City, the matter of Lin Xun's crafting Emperor-grade tools had set off another tsunami of pandemonium.

Chapter 2281 Storm in Imperial City

Outside the Divine Forge Workshop, Emperors could be seen everywhere. Ordinary cultivators had no place to stand and could only watch from afar.

There were simply too many Emperors, and the sheer pressure of their auras was suffocating. Who would dare to approach?

Someone secretly counted and found that, in just four days, a staggering forty-five Emperor-level figures had gathered here!

Among them were five old antiques who had reached the ninth realm Emperor Stage, beings rarely seen in the world.

Such an assembly was enough to shake the entire world. It was a scene worthy of being called the 'Gathering of all Emperors.'

Yet, despite the presence of so many powerhouses, not a single person showed impatience. All of them waited in silence.

In the past four days, news had spread like wildfire. Lin Daoyuan had crafted twelve Emperor-grade weapons, causing an uproar across the city. However, what really sent shockwaves through the world was that every single one of those twelve weapons was of the supreme grade!

Everyone began to understand why the arrogant Divine Forge Imperial Clan had been utterly humbled by Lin Daoyuan.

To wield such an unfathomable mastery over the art of runes, who wouldn't be in awe?

For the cultivators of Thousand Flame Imperial City, the events of the past few days felt like witnessing the birth of an unprecedented legend.

And Lin Daoyuan was that legend!

Now, the Emperors gathered outside the Divine Forge Workshop were not just here to spectate, but their hearts had been stirred and they had decided to commission Lin Xun to forge weapons for them!

More than that, they were lining up in an orderly fashion, each one eager to have their own custom-made Emperor-grade weapon.

Upon learning this, Huang Cangtian, the patriarch of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage who had been observing in the shadows, could no longer remain still. He stepped forward personally to oversee the situation.

With his transcendent ruler-like status, even those at the Emperor Ancestor Stage would have to show him respect and dared not act recklessly.

Thus, despite the growing number of formidable figures surrounding the Divine Forge Workshop, order remained and there was no chaos or disturbances.

Huang Cangtian was naturally happy and satisfied to see this.

“Patriarch, over the past few days, we have captured and executed thirty-seven experts from the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Lineage in the city. Unfortunately, they were all insignificant figures and none had reached the Emperor Stage.” An old man in a black robe stepped forward and reported to Huang Cangtian through voice transmission.

“Additionally, within our clan, we found thirty-nine members who had fallen under the control of the Spiritbinder Parasite. Among them, four were elders, while sixteen others have mysteriously disappeared. Nine more are under suspicion...”

As he spoke, he handed a jade slip to Huang Cangtian. “This is the full list, Patriarch.”

Huang Cangtian opened the jade slip, scanning its contents before speaking in a calm, authoritative tone, “Detain and suppress everyone on this list. Have the enforcement elders personally interrogate them. We must uncover the culprit behind this and determine their current whereabouts.”

The black-robed old man nodded before hesitating momentarily, “Patriarch, should we...also conduct an investigation on the Emperors within the clan?”

Huang Cangtian narrowed his eyes slightly, falling silent in deep thought. A moment later, a resolute glint flashed across his eyes as he made his decision, “The Grand Elder will oversee this matter. Remember, the investigation must remain discreet and no information must be leaked.”

The black-robed old man bowed solemnly.

“If we find that any of the Emperor elders are involved...” Huang Cangtian paused, taking a deep breath.

A trace of ruthlessness flickered in his eyes. “Tell the Grand Elder to detain them immediately. If they resist, execute them without hesitation!”

Trembling inwardly, the black-robed old man accepted the command and left to carry it out.

“If we don’t root out the internal threats, if we allow them to work with outside forces, the Celestial Phoenix Lineage...will be doomed... I can only pray that...there aren’t too many traitors among us...”

Huang Cangtian’s eyes were deep and unfathomable.

Thousand Flame Imperial City was prosperous and bustling, and with Lin Xun’s appearance, it had drawn the attention of all corners of the world.

Despite that, Huang Cangtian knew very well that beneath the surface, dark currents were swirling and storms were brewing!

The White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans had yet to truly bare their sharp fangs, but Huang Cangtian had no doubt that they were planning something.

Perhaps, as soon as the powerful figure of the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos arrived, the hidden forces of those two clans would strike with devastating force!

However, that wasn't Huang Cangtian's greatest worry. His deepest concern was the possibility of something going wrong when the Progenitor Ancestor finally awakened.

This was also the fundamental reason why he felt the need to oversee everything personally.

.....

Time slipped by unnoticed. Two months passed in the blink of an eye.

Atop the highest floor of a thousand-foot-tall restaurant, far away from the Divine Forge Workshop, two figures arrived in Thousand Flame Imperial City.

One was a man in a red robe and the other was an old man with snow-white hair and beard.

The red-robed man was Emperor Ancestor Wanliu of the White Tiger Lineage, a figure of immense power and status.

The old man with white hair and beard was Emperor Ancestor Qianyin, a revered ancient figure from the Black Tortoise Lineage.

These two old antiques were the masterminds behind the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans invasion of the Celestial Phoenix Clan.

"Have you found out the background of that Lin Daoyuan?" Emperor Ancestor Wanliu asked.

Despite his youthful appearance, his eyes reflected apocalyptic visions such as skies collapsing, earth splitting, and all things withering into dust.

An old man in a gray robe stood respectfully to the side and reported, "Old Ancestor, the only thing we can confirm now is that Lin Daoyuan came from outside the Celestial Phoenix World."

"So, he is most likely from the Ancient Nebula Road?" Emperor Ancestor Wanliu's eyes flickered.

No one answered.

“Huang Cangtian is quite calculating.” Emperor Ancestor Wanliu mused, “He used Lin Daoyuan’s reputation to draw nearly all the Emperors of the Celestial Phoenix World to the Divine Forge Workshop, turning them into an unintentional barrier.”

Emperor Ancestor Qianyin, standing beside him, spoke in a deep voice, “Fellow Daoist Wanliu, what do you suggest we do next?”

Emperor Wanliu frowned, sinking into thought.

According to their original plan, the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans were to move in the shadows, gradually taking control of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage’s core figures.

Then, once the powerful figure from the Luo Clan arrived, they would launch a coordinated strike, using the Celestial Phoenix Lineage experts already under their control to destroy the Celestial Phoenix Clan from within in one fell swoop.

Unfortunately, an unforeseen variable had disrupted their scheme now.

Two months ago, the Celestial Phoenix Clan launched a sudden and decisive operation, sweeping through Thousand Flame Imperial City with thunderous force to hunt down cultivators of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans.

To make matters worse, the ‘chess pieces’ in the Celestial Phoenix Clan that the two clans had planted were also being eliminated one by one!

That alone was a devastating setback.

That was not all.

The White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans had already fully mobilized their forces and were ready for battle, confident that, once battle erupted, they could crush the Celestial Phoenix Clan.

In other words, even in a direct confrontation, the two clans believed that they held the absolute advantage.

Now, they had encountered a tricky problem—

Lin Daoyuan!

He was a dao rune founder who had seemingly appeared out of nowhere. His mastery in the art of runes was so profound that even the Divine Forge Imperial Clan had bowed in acknowledgment!

Over the past two months, as Lin Daoyuan began crafting weapons, it sent shockwaves throughout the Celestial Phoenix World, igniting an unprecedented uproar.

Upon learning this, Emperor Ancestor Wanliu and Qianyin could not hide their shock, their expressions darkened, and even their hands trembled slightly.

This was a dao rune founder capable of forging three supreme-grade Emperor-grade weapons a day. A talent like him was enough to shake the world and was rarely seen in tens of thousands of years.

However, the tricky problem before Emperor Ancestor Wanliu was precisely caused by Lin Daoyuan.

Over the past two months, Emperors from all over the Celestial Phoenix World had flocked to the city in staggering numbers!

Normally, Emperors were elusive beings, their movements as unpredictable as a hidden dragon's.

Yet now, over a hundred had gathered in front of Divine Forge Workshop A1. This was unheard of in all of history!

All of this was because of Lin Daoyuan.

For the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clan, this posed a grave dilemma. Their true target lay within the very area where Divine Forge Workshop A1 stood.

Even a fool could see that as long as Lin Daoyuan remained, anyone attempting to attack the workshop would first have to contend with the gathered Emperors.

This was exactly the tricky problem that Emperor Ancestor Wanliu and Qianyin had encountered.

There were over a hundred Emperors!

This was a force strong enough to shake even primordial clans such as the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans!

“This proves that Huang Cangtian has already seen through our plans and made thorough preparations.” Emperor Ancestor Wanliu finally spoke, “This means that no matter what move we make, they will be ready to counter it.”

After a pause, coldness flashed across his eyes. “However, I doubt these gathered Emperors will dare to stay once they learn of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage's impending fate!”

Emperor Ancestors Qianyin pondered for a moment and nodded, “So, are we making our intention to attack the Celestial Phoenix Clan public now?”

“We have no other choice. If we wait until the powerful figure from the Luo Clan arrives, it will be too late...” Emperor Ancestor Wanliu said coldly.

Emperor Ancestor Qianliu nodded.

On the same day, a shocking announcement spread:

“The White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans, under orders of the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos, will soon descend upon Thousand Flame Imperial City to annihilate the Celestial Phoenix Clan!”

As soon as the news came out, the city erupted into chaos.

Before anyone could verify the truth, more messages followed:

“On the day of the assault, anyone aiding the Celestial Phoenix Clan will be slaughtered along with their entire clan!”

“Any forces that fail to evacuate the Thousand Flame Imperial City before the invasion will also be executed!”

“Those willing to serve the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans will be rewarded generously once the Celestial Phoenix Clan is wiped out!”

Those announcements spread like a tidal wave, plunging Thousand Flame Imperial City into turmoil.

Everyone realized that an unprecedented catastrophe was about to descend and sweep through Thousand Flame Imperial City like a storm!

Chapter 2282 The Beautiful Fiery Red Figure

In less than three days, Thousand Flame Imperial City, the once most prosperous city in the world, had grown eerily desolate.

The once bustling streets, sprawling in all directions like a vast spider web were now nearly empty. People fled in disarray and even entire clans departed in large groups.

As the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans' declaration continued to spread, Thousand Flame Imperial City became a city on the brink of disaster and storms of destruction loomed.

No one cared whether the Celestial Phoenix Lineage would survive. For ordinary cultivators, evacuation was the only priority. They feared being caught in the catastrophe!

When the city gate was set ablaze, even the fish in the pond suffered.

Moreover, the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans had already made their stance clear: Anyone associated with the Celestial Phoenix Clan or anyone remaining in the Thousand Flame Imperial City would be marked for death!

The wind blew cold and panic spread like wildfire.

Even the Divine Forge Imperial Clan, as the city's hosts, were powerless to stop them. They could not possibly keep all the people in the city with force.

The area in front of Divine Forge Workshop A1 had also become much quieter. The once crowded streets and alleys, once teeming with people, were now nearly deserted.

Of the hundreds of Emperor Stage old monsters who had gathered here, fewer than thirty remained. More than half had disappeared!

After all, most of those who had departed were not members of the Celestial Phoenix Clan, how could they be expected to stay and risk their lives in such perilous times?

Huang Cangtian made no attempt to stop them, but simply kept their names in mind.

His eyes ran across the remaining Emperors, his expression calm and composed, devoid of any panic. "Why haven't you left?"

"If not for the Divine Forge Workshop, we would never have obtained supreme-grade Emperor weapons in such a short time. Now that the Divine Forge Imperial Clan is in danger, how could we just stand by and watch?" One of the old monsters stepped forward and replied firmly.

His words struck a chord, and the remaining Emperors nodded in agreement.

The Divine Forge Imperial Clan was affiliated with the Celestial Phoenix Lineage, its foundation deeply rooted in Thousand Flame Imperial City. If the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans launched their attacks, the Divine Forge Imperial Clan would inevitably be caught in the crossfire.

Huang Cangtian's gaze swept across the gathered Emperors before he suddenly threw his head back and laughed. "A friend in need is a friend indeed! On behalf of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan, I will remember the kindness you've shown today!"

There was no denying that the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans' intimidation tactics had been highly effective. With mere words, they had sown chaos throughout the city, shifting the tides of the situation in an instant.

The immense pressure weighed heavily on Huang Cangtian, making him aware that when this catastrophe struck, it would be far more devastating than anyone could imagine.

However, now that things had reached this point, there was no turning back. Rather than fear, the looming crisis fuelled the flames of battle in his heart.

Without hesitation, he issued an order, "Announce to the entire city, three days from now, the battle formation of Thousand Flame Imperial City will be activated. Anyone who wishes to leave must do so within these three days!"

"Yes!" Someone quickly departed to carry out his command.

.....

"When the storm comes, everyone fears for their own survival. Few people are willing to stand with the Celestial Phoenix Clan and face life and death with them."

In a tavern, Emperor Ancestor Wanliu uttered that statement leisurely, a satisfied smile playing on his lips.

Over the past few days, he had been observing the scenes unfold in the city.

"Huang Cangtian plans to seal off the entire city in three days. It's time for us to leave." Emperor Ancestor Qianyin said as he stood up.

"Alright, let's wait just a little longer!" Emperor Ancestor Wanliu agreed with a smile.

Soon, once the armies of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans had fully assembled, the time would come to launch their assault!

.....

Meanwhile, within a secret realm world.

Lin Xun emerged from his meditation, exhaling a deep, satisfied breath.

For the past two months, he had devoted himself entirely to his ‘training,’ crafting weapons, refining his skills and restoring his physical strength, working tirelessly day and night.

Now, countless inspirations, ideas and insights churned in his mind, like molten lava on the verge of eruption.

He knew that the purpose of this period of training had been fulfilled. Next, perhaps it was time for him to forge his own life-bound Emperor weapon.

At that moment, Huang Cangtian arrived, his expression unusually serious. He briefly informed Lin Xun of the events that had unfolded over the past two months.

Then, fixing Lin Xun with a solemn gaze, he said, “If you wish to leave, now is the time. But if you don’t leave now, it will be too late.”

Lian Jiuxiao and other old antiques from the Divine Forge Imperial Clan exchanged uneasy glances. None of them had anticipated that the situation outside had escalated to such a critical point in such a short time.

Finally, all eyes turned to Lin Xun.

Lin Xun was silent for a moment, then said calmly, “Back then, it was because of my mother that the elders and the Celestial Phoenix Clan severed all ties with the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos. Now that disaster looms over them, how can I just walk away?”

Lian Jiuxiao and others were dumbfounded for a moment, only now realizing that Lin Daoyuan’s mother was actually Luo Qingxun!

Even Luo Jia stood frozen in disbelief.

Despite that, Lin Xun simply smiled and continued. “Besides, I have yet to forge my life-bound Emperor weapon, how could I leave like this? And even if I leave, without the help of the Celestial Phoenix Clan, returning to the Ancient Nebula Road would be impossible.”

Huang Cangtian stared at Lin Xun for a long moment before finally speaking, “Since you’ve made up your mind, I won’t keep anything from you.”

With that, he revealed the secrets of the Celestial Phoenix Clan. Their Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor had been in deep slumber within this secret realm.

“So, their true target is the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor?” Lin Xun narrowed his black eyes slightly.

Huang Cangtian nodded. "If our Venerable Ancestor awakens, it will pose a great threat to the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans. The Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos has sent a powerful figure to ensure our progenitor submits."

Only now did Lin Xun grasp the full severity of the crisis facing the Celestial Phoenix Clan. The Divine Forge Workshop A1 had become the eye of the storm!

"In that case, there's even less reason for me to leave." Lin Xun's expression was calm. "Elder, if there's anything you need me to do, just say the word. I will do everything in my power."

Huang Cangtian was silent for a moment, then chuckled, "This battle hasn't begun just yet. For now, my friend, focus on forging your weapon here."

His gaze swept toward Lian Jiuxiao and the others. "But they can't stay to assist you anymore."

Lin Xun shook his head. "No problem."

With his skill, he needed no assistance.

"Luo Jia, you stay here." Huang Cangtian ordered.

Luo Jia had already understood the seriousness of the situation and couldn't help but protest, "Patriarch, I wish to serve the clan as well."

Huang Cangtian smiled. "Staying here is serving the clan."

With that, he led Lian Jiuxiao and the others away.

Thousand Flame Imperial City, built by the Divine Forge Imperial Clan, had stood for countless years like a tremendous Emperor weapon, surrounded by countless restrictions and arrays.

Now, as a catastrophe loomed, the city could not be without the presence of powerful figures like Lian Jiuxiao and the others.

Soon Lin Xun and Luo Jia were the only ones left in this secret realm.

Noticing Luo Jia's distracted and anxious expression, Lin Xun spoke softly to reassure her, "Don't worry, as long as I'm here, I won't let the Celestial Phoenix Clan face destruction."

However, Luo Jia just nodded absently, her mind clearly elsewhere.

Lin Xun didn't say anything more. Right now, his focus was...

Of course to forge his life-bound Emperor weapon!

Lin Xun flicked his sleeve.

Boom!

The All-Wonder Dao Fire surged forth, transforming into a three-legged furnace with two ears, radiating an aura of eternity and immortality.

This was the true form of the All-Wonder Dao Fire!

When it was first tamed, an astonishing vision had unfolded. Between heaven and earth, all things fell into silence, and only a flaming furnace continued to burn. The laws of heaven and earth, the sun, moon and stars were all incinerated into nothingness.

The traces of time and the trajectories of space seemed to cease to exist, and only the furnace-like fire remained, like a constant, an indestructible force in the universe!

Lin Xun vividly remembered the words of the fire warriors guarding it:

“To obtain this fire means to be entangled with the karma of it. To understand the karma means to consult all the wonders. No matter who you are. I dare to ask, are you willing to take this fire to the All-Wonder Dominion?”[1]

It was at that moment that Lin Xun suspected that the All-Wonder Dao Fire had some deep connection with the All-Wonder Dominion, one of the four great dao dominions!

However, over the years, the All-Wonder Dao Fire had never been fully utilized. At best, it had only served to help Lin Xun cook some delicious meals...

“Today, I will use you as a furnace to smelt Emperor-grade weapons into divine materials and forge a life-bound Emperor weapon that is truly mine!”

Taking a deep breath, his robe fluttered as he swept his hand. Dozens of Emperor weapons shot out, each glowing brightly and radiating unique mysteries and powers.

Among them were the Treasure Bind Golden Rope, the Star Map of All, Yuantu Sword, the Abi Sword and many more.

These were the spoils Lin Xun had acquired over the years from fallen enemies, all incredible and precious Emperor-grade weapons with unfathomable power.

Now, Lin Xun planned to refine them, using them as auxiliary materials to forge a weapon of his own!

Of course, that was not all.

With another wave of his sleeve, Kunlun's nine Emperor weapons also emerged—the Dao Formless Sword, Dao Lawless Blade, Dao Skyless Spear, Dao Lifeless Seal, Dao Structureless Flag, Dao Immeasurable Bottle, Dao Emptiness Plate, Dao Blameless Lamp, and Dao Flawless Armor.

In addition, there was also the ancient copper piece, a piece of the Treasure Refining Furnace!

Not far away, Luo Jia was at a loss for words. She never imagined that Lin Xun possessed such a vast collection of Emperor-grade weapons with each one a precious treasure of heaven and earth.

Unbelievable.

Yet to Lin Xun, these were nothing.

His dao encompassed all daos and derived all laws. It was unique throughout history, unlike any that had come before or would ever come again.

Naturally, the same had to be applied to his life-bound Emperor weapon!

Only by forging a weapon that perfectly resonated with his dao and cultivation could he unleash an unprecedented level of combat power.

“I will use my dao as the formation, my Dharma as the pattern, to smelt the Emperor weapons and refine the weapon embryo...” Lin Xun took a deep breath.

Before he could begin, a sudden tremor shook the vast hall. The next moment, a fiery red figure appeared out of thin air.

It was a woman who seemed to be transformed from divine flames. She was breathtakingly beautiful, radiant beyond compare. The aura she exuded was enough to incinerate the heavens to ashes, vast and domineering.

In that instant, the more than a thousand divine flames scattered throughout this secret realm began to flicker violently, like subjects bowing to their sovereign!

Only the All-Wonder Dao Fire remained unaffected, standing still and calm, radiating the aura of eternity and immortality.

The woman's gaze swept across Kunlun's nine Emperor weapons and the copper piece before shifting to the All-Wonder Dao Fire. Finally, her luminous eyes settled on Lin Xun and she said, “Young man, you have successfully caught my attention.”

Chapter 2283 Guidance from Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor!

The moment Lin Xun recognized the identity of the flame-like beauty before him, he simply smiled, unfazed.

Over the past two months, he had already sensed her presence on multiple occasions, secretly observing him from the shadows. Despite that, he had chosen to ignore it.

He knew that the moment Kunlun's nine Emperor weapons and the copper piece of the Treasure Refining Furnace appeared, she would no longer be able to resist revealing herself.

"You are the first person in history to have gathered all Kunlun's nine Emperor weapons, and you are also the only fortunate one to have obtained an original relic of the Treasure Refining Furnace."

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor studied Lin Xun closely and remarked, "Of course, you are also a supreme Emperor with an extraordinary cultivation."

Lin Xun bowed. "Thank you for your praise, Elder."

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor pondered for a moment before asking, "Are you certain you wish to smelt all Kunlun's nine Emperor weapons?"

Lin Xun answered, "I will need your help to do so."

The true form of the Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor was the innate dao fire of the Treasure Refining Furnace. It was with her assistance that the furnace had once forged Kunlun's nine Emperor weapons!

However, Lin Xun knew that smelting such divine artifacts was no simple feat. Even with the power of the All-Wonder Dao Fire, refining the Kunlun nine Emperors Weapons would not be easy.

"Hmph, so you've thought everything through," Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor cast him a sidelong glance. "But what makes you so sure I'll help you?"

Lin Xun bowed respectfully, "I can only hope for your assistance."

"Then tell me, what kind of life-bound Emperor weapon do you have in mind?" asked Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor.

Lin Xun pondered for a moment before replying, “Once it is complete, you will see for yourself. If I fail, there’s no point in explaining.”

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor raised her brows but didn’t press further.

After a brief silence, she finally said, “Since you possess an original relic of the Treasure Refining Furnace, I won’t refuse to help you. But are you certain you want to smelt all Kunlun nine Emperor weapons?”

Each of Kunlun’s nine Emperor weapons possessed its own profound wonders, making them invaluable among Emperor weapons. For instance, the Dao Lawless Blade bypassed all laws in the world, the Dao Flawless Armor was utterly indestructible, the Dao Blameless Lamp could guide lost souls home, and the Dao Emptiness Plate could unravel the mysteries of the great dao...

It was no exaggeration to say that owning even one of these weapons would grant an Emperor immense power and endless benefits.

Yet now, Lin Xun planned to smelt all of them. If word of this got out, it would undoubtedly send shockwaves through the world.

Lin Xun answered without hesitation, “Their wonders can all be integrated into my life-bound Emperor weapon.”

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor furrowed her brows. “You have quite the appetite. I’m curious to see what kind of treasure you’ll create.”

As she spoke, her gaze landed on the All-Wonder Dao Fire and said, “Where did you obtain this fire?”

Lin Xun recounted his experiences in the tomb world of the Supreme Realm, leaving nothing out.

“So they left it there...” Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor seemed to recall something, a sigh escaping her lips “No wonder...”

Who were ‘they’?

Lin Xun’s thoughts immediately turned to legendary figures from the beginning of the primeval era, such as Sword Emperor Taixuan, Battle Emperor Mo Yang, Saint Buddha Xingjia and others.

After all, the Supreme Realm was formed from the world core they had seized from the Ancient Nebula Underworld!

However, Lin Xun was still uncertain about who had left behind the All-Wonder Dao Fire.

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor mused aloud, “This fire surpasses mine in wonder, but it lacks a fire spirit like me. Perhaps, when you have the chance to visit the All-Wonder Dominion, you’ll be able to find the spirit entity it has lost.”

Lin Xun was startled. “Elder, have you been to the All-Wonder Dominion before?”

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor shook her head. “I have only heard the will power of the Treasure Refining Furnace speak about this matter. As for the exact location of the All-Wonder Dominion, I have no idea.”

She paused for a moment before adding, “By now, you should be aware that the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor is in deep slumber within this secret realm. I estimate that he will awaken in less than a month.”

Lin Xun was taken aback, then said, “Elder, please speak plainly.”

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor met his gaze and said, “When the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor awakens, should danger arise, I hope that you will lend a hand.”

Lin Xun nodded. “That’s only right.”

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor gave Lin Xun a deep look before saying, “Let’s begin.”

Swoosh!

With a flick of her hand, the copper piece and Kunlun’s nine Emperor weapons flew into her palm one by one like streaks of flowing light.

Boom!

Then, from her hand, a torrent of dazzling divine flames erupted, swelling into a vortex then began melting the nine weapons along with the copper piece.

Lin Xun wasted no time. He let out a long breath, his eyes growing clear, his mind steady, devoid of all distractions.

At this moment, there was only one thought in his heart—a pure desire to forge a weapon.

With a single thought, the sound of hammers striking metal rang out. One by one, dozens of Emperor-grade weapons soared into the furnace formed by the All-Wonder Dao Fire.

Then, with unwavering focus, Lin Xun manipulated the All-Wonder Dao Fire as it roiled continuously, refining those Emperor weapons.

His technique was precise and fluid. After two months of practice, he had accumulated an incomparable wealth of experience.

Even so, he remained extremely cautious.

Each Emperor-grade weapon was inscribed with unique dao runes and imbued with its own mystical powers.

Melting them down while preserving their wonders and power was a true test of a weapon refiner's skill.

In essence, refining Emperor-grade weapons was easy, but breaking them down into divine materials while retaining their essence and magic was extremely difficult.

For Lin Xun, it was also a huge challenge.

Fortunately, the power of the All-Wonder Dao Fire did not let him down. Under its careful control, the dozens of Emperor-grade weapons slowly began to show signs of being refined...

Lin Xun estimated that the process would take at least ten days.

“During this time, I'll have to trouble you all to protect me.”

With that thought, Lin Xun summoned Xi, Big Yellow, and Xia Zhi from the Dao Endless Pagoda.

“Okay.”

Xi and the others understood that Lin Xun was forging his life-bound Emperor weapon and could not afford any distractions.

Lin Xun nodded and fully immersed himself in the refining process.

In the distance, Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor took notice of Xi, Big Yellow, and Xia Zhi, but she remained silent.

All of a sudden, the atmosphere in this secret realm grew solemn and still.

Three days later.

Under the command of Huang Cangtian, a formidable group, including Lian Jiuxiao of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan, set off to completely seal off Thousand Flame Imperial City before activating its ultimate defense formation.

From above, the sight was breathtaking. Thousand Flame Imperial City stood majestically over a vast sea of fire. As restriction arrays were activated, a divine brilliance erupted into the sky, illuminating the world in a dazzling spectacle.

Within the city, the streets were quiet and deserted.

Aside from the Celestial Phoenix Clan experts stationed in the city, the Divine Forge Imperial Clan experts, and a few allied forces under the Celestial Phoenix Clan's command, not a single outsider could be seen.

It was also from this day on that a murderous and oppressive atmosphere descended upon the city, suffocating it like a rising tide.

Seven days later.

Thousands of miles away from Thousand Flame Imperial City, in the heart of a mountain range, the void suddenly trembled violently.

Rumble!

Figures emerged from thin air like a massive tide. Their presence was like heavenly soldiers and generals descending upon the world, their powerful auras shaking the very sky.

This spectacle continued for a full quarter of an hour.

When the quaking of the void finally subsided, an army of eight hundred thousand cultivators had assembled in this mountain range!

“Not bad, they didn't arrive too late.”

Emperor Ancestor Wanliu and Emperor Ancestor Qianyin, who had been waiting, nodded in approval.

This mighty army, led by the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans, was composed of powerful experts from various affiliated clans.

Among them were fifty Emperor Stage experts in total.

In addition, the other experts in the army were carefully selected warriors, each having experienced countless battles and bloodshed.

Of course, in the minds of Emperor Ancestor Wanliu and Emperor Ancestor Qianyin, the true backbone of the battle lay with the Emperors. The lower-ranked cultivators were merely tasked with auxiliary duties.

For example, after conquering Thousand Flame Imperial City and destroying the Celestial Phoenix Clan, it would be the lower-ranked cultivators who handled the aftermath—clearing the battlefield, maintaining order and establishing control over the territory.

Thus, despite the presence of eight hundred thousand troops, the actual determining factor in battle would be the Emperors.

Fifty Emperors was already an incredibly powerful force.

However, it was clear that even this might not be enough to crush one of the Four Great Primordial Clans that had been standing for countless years.

In truth, this formidable army was just an advance force.

In the plan of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans, the arrival of the influential figure from the Luo Clan would signal the full mobilization of their strength!

“Let’s go, it’s time to head to the gates.” With a flick of his sleeve, Emperor Ancestor Wanliu declared and took the lead.

On this day, an army of eight hundred thousand troops arrived outside Thousand Flame Imperial City, surrounding it like an unstoppable tide!

Those who had been closely watching the situation in Thousand Flame Imperial City were shaken to the core. The rumors that had spread across the world were finally confirmed. The White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans had truly come to wage war against the Celestial Phoenix Clan.

A question weighed heavily on everyone’s mind: Could the Celestial Phoenix Clan withstand this calamity?

However, the army of eight hundred thousand troops did not immediately launch an attack. Instead, they stood at the city gates, seemingly waiting for something.

Even so, an oppressive and suffocating tension loomed over Thousand Flame Imperial City.

The experts of the Celestial Phoenix Clan and the Divine Forge Imperial Clan could feel the terrifying pressure bearing down on them.

By now, how could they not understand that since the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans dared to deploy such a massive force, this disaster would not be easily averted.

“As long as our Celestial Phoenix Clan survives this battle...one day...we will return this debt tenfold, a hundredfold!”

Huang Cangtian stood atop the towering city wall, his gaze cold as he surveyed the vast armies of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans gathered outside the city.

Around him, all the old antiques of the Celestial Phoenix Clan radiated murderous intent, their expressions dark and imposing.

The Celestial Phoenix World was their clan's territory, yet now, it faced an invasion. The actions of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans made it clear that they attached no importance to them at all.

"Has there been any sign of the Progenitor Ancestor awakening?" Huang Cangtian suddenly asked.

The surrounding experts exchanged glances before shaking their heads.

Huang Cangtian's brows furrowed, and a barely perceptible trace of worry flashed across his eyes.

Chapter 2284 The Tribulation of an Emperor-grade Weapon

Ten days later.

In the secret realm, amidst swirling light and shadow, dozens of fist-sized, multicolored clusters of liquid light floated within the All-Wonder Dao Fire, radiating a misty glow.

At this moment, Lin Xun felt a weight lifting off his shoulders.

The smelting process was a success. Dozens of Emperor-grade weapons, each imbued with unique and mysterious powers, had been refined into a single, unified liquid divine material!

Lin Xun turned his gaze toward Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor in the distance just as she flicked her sleeve. The clusters of divine light instantly flew toward him. "I've been waiting for you," she said

"Thank you, Elder." Lin Xun's spirits lifted as he carefully stored the divine materials.

Without delay, he retrieved a handful of divine herbs and elixirs, sat cross-legged, and began to replenish his depleted strength.

A full day later, Lin Xun rose to his feet, power surging through his body once more.

Without hesitation, he began the true process of forging his weapon.

Boom!

The All-Wonder Dao Fire roared to life, transforming into a blazing furnace that radiated an aura powerful enough to incinerate heaven and earth.

Lin Xun's dark eyes gleamed like lightning as he stood, calm and transcendent. With a wave of his sleeve, the liquified divine materials surged into the All-Wonder Dao Fire, merging seamlessly into the raging flames.

“Rise!”

Behind him, a world of light and shadow unfolded. It was vast and magnificent, and within it, countless great daos emerged, projecting the sun, moon, stars, the cosmos stretching infinitely, mountains and rivers flowing endlessly, and the four seasons cycling in harmony...

This was the pinnacle manifestation of his cultivation.

Even from a distance, Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor, Xi, and Big Yellow couldn't hide their astonishment.

This was the first time they had witnessed Lin Xun's true foundation. If they hadn't seen it for themselves, they would have struggled to believe that a young cultivator at the third realm Emperor Stage could possess such a profound and unshakable foundation!

It was too powerful!

It defied all logic and overturned their understanding of the world completely.

Only Xia Zhi and Luo Jia remained indifferent. The former had never paid attention to such matters, while the latter, due to her limited cultivation, failed to grasp just how heaven-defying and terrifying Lin Xun's foundation and cultivation truly were.

Boom!

At this moment, Lin Xun's cultivation suddenly roared, evolving into intricate formations of dao runes. Within them, various dharma arts took shape as rune symbols, interweaving in a profound and mysterious manner.

I will use my dao as the formation, my Dharma as the pattern!

“So, this boy's mastery in the art of runes...has already reached an unfathomable level. It's as if he has seized the very essence of creation itself...”

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor's gaze flickered. As the innate dao fire of the Treasure Refining Furnace, she naturally possessed a deep understanding of the mysteries of dao runes.

Yet it was precisely because she understood so much that she found herself deeply astonished.

Xi and Big Yellow also watched in amazement, their thoughts mirroring those of the Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor.

Dao runes, the veins of the great dao, were imprinted upon all phenomena and existences in the universe, revealing its most fundamental mysteries.

From the smallest veins on a blade of grass to the vast structures that shaped the world, traces of the most primordial great dao could be found everywhere..

Since ancient times, one unshakable truth had remained—

Those who have grasped dao runes could unlock the mysteries of the heavens and earth!

Clearly, Lin Xun's mastery over runes had long surpassed that of ordinary dao rune founders, reaching an unfathomable and near-miraculous level!

Suddenly, he called out, "Little Five!"

Shua!

The child-like array spirit emerged in an instant. With just a quick glance, it understood everything. Without hesitation, it took control of the dao rune array that Lin Xun had laid out, seamlessly integrating the divine materials within the roaring All-Wonder Dao Fire.

There was no doubt that Little Five was worthy of being the array spirit of the All-Heaven Fifth Array. Its skills in rune arrays were unparalleled and each movement was precise without the slightest flaw.

Seeing this, Lin Xun felt reassured. Without distractions, he focused entirely on refining the weapon embryo!

Time flew by, and before he knew it, another half a month had passed.

"Hmm?" On this day, Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor seemed to sense something. She glanced at Lin Xun who was still deeply engrossed in refining the weapon in the distance, but she didn't disturb him.

With a turn, she vanished from the hall and entered the depths of the sea of fire beneath the secret realm.

In the bubbling molten lava, a fiery red, glowing egg rested quietly. Purple flames danced around its surface, radiating a faint, rhythmic pulse like the breath of life.

“Are you finally awakening?” Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor’s voice trembled with excitement as she gazed at the egg.

For countless years, she had stood guard here, waiting for the awakening of the legendary Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor from the egg.

She murmured, “Don’t worry. As long as I’m here, no one will disturb your rebirth from the ashes.”

.....

Meanwhile, in the secret realm, Lian Jiuxiao hurriedly arrived, as if something urgent had happened.

However, when he saw the look of focus on Lin Xun’s face, he hesitated. Then, he noticed Xi, Big Yellow, and Xia Zhi, and he looked a little puzzled.

“You are...?” he asked.

Big Yellow raised its paw, gesturing toward Lin Xun with a slightly modest expression. It coughed and said, “We...are his elders.”

Xi remained indifferent, saying nothing.

Xia Zhi glanced at Big Yellow and added, “Your master is Lin Xun’s senior brother. So, you are Lin Xun’s junior.”

Big Yellow rolled its eyes, too lazy to argue with Xia Zhi, and narrowed its eyes at Lian Jiuxiao before asking, “Did something happen?”

Lian Jiuxiao hesitated for a moment then quickly explained, “The White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans launched an attack not long ago. The Celestial Phoenix Clan’s patriarch has instructed me to inform Fellow Daoist Lin to be cautious from now on.

“But Fellow Daoist Lin needn’t worry, unless things escalate to a final battle, there shouldn’t be any real danger.”

Big Yellow nodded. “Got it. You can go back and tell Huang Cangtian that with us around, nothing bad will happen to this kid.”

To their surprise, at this moment, Lin Xun suddenly spoke up, “Big Yellow, you, Xi, and Xia Zhi go to the outside world to assist. You don’t need to guard this place.”

Big Yellow was baffled, Xi was also caught off guard, and Xia Zhi furrowed her brow.

“That’s not necessary. The battle has just begun,” Lian Jiuxiao said, thinking that relying on only two women and a dog wouldn’t change much.

“Let’s go.” Xi urged, heading straight for the exit of the secret realm.

Lin Xun was in the midst of a critical moment in refining the weapon and could not afford distractions.

Xia Zhi followed closely behind, clearly giving great importance to Lin Xun’s instructions.

Only Big Yellow was irritated, muttering, “They already told us not to help but you guys are rushing to the front lines. Aren’t you making things difficult for yourself...Huh, wait a minute, the White Tiger Clan and the Black Tortoise Clan...”

Suddenly, Big Yellow’s eyes gleamed, as if an enticing thought crossed its mind and saliva began to drip from its mouth.

In the blink of an eye, it hurried to catch up with them.

“Wait...” Lian Jiuxiao was taken aback for a moment before hurrying off in a rush.

“Little Five, don’t get distracted!” Lin Xun reminded the array spirit sharply.

It had already taken ten days to smelt the divine materials, and now, another half month had passed while setting up the formation and refining the weapon embryo.

Now was the critical moment in refining the weapon and there was no room for error.

Although Lin Xun knew that war was likely breaking out in the outside world, he had to set aside all distractions and focus entirely on forging the weapon.

Little Five also understood this and immediately focused all his attention on controlling the dao rune array.

Rumble—

The All-Wonder Dao Fire roared like thunder, showering the area with an endless cascade of flames. Gradually, a vague outline of an Emperor weapon embryo began to take shape amidst the fire. Countless dao runes symbols flickered, adding to the air of mystery and radiance.

This was undoubtedly the most strenuous experience Lin Xun had ever endured in his weapon forging journey. Sweat formed at the tip of his nose and his face turned slightly pale.

The drain on his physical energy was immense, but the toll on his mental energy was even greater!

At this critical juncture, the air within the secret realm suddenly grew heavy, and waves of tribulation aura surged, gathering like a chilling wind.

“Oh no! That’s a taboo tribulation that targets Emperor-grade weapons!”

At the deepest part of the sea of fire beneath the secret realm, Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor turned ashen-faced as she suddenly raised her head, sensing the ominous aura.

She was all too familiar with that aura.

A long time ago, when the Treasure Refining Furnace had crafted Kunlun’s nine Emperor weapons, it too had faced such a taboo tribulation. In the end, the furnace was forced to sacrifice itself to protect the weapons from the tribulation, allowing them to fully transform.

The Treasure Refining Furnace was also completely destroyed at that time, leaving behind nothing but a copper piece!

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor never expected that Lin Xun would encounter such a taboo tribulation when forging his own life-bound Emperor weapon. Worry gripped her heart, but she knew she could not leave.

The Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor was showing signs of awakening, and she could not leave at such a crucial moment.

“Young man, you must hold on,” she silently prayed.

The tribulation clouds were dense and dark as ink, emerging out of nowhere, bypassing the restrictions that enveloped the secret realm.

Lin Xun’s expression turned solemn.

He was also caught off guard for a moment, but he quickly regained his composure and said firmly, “Little Five, please step aside. I’ll handle this myself!”

Little Five hesitated, a worried expression flickering across his face. “But...”

“Now!” Lin Xun’s resolute voice left no room for argument.

Reluctantly, Little Five darted away. In an instant, Lin Xun’s figure blurred as his five dao bodies emerged at the same time.

The Red Flame Dao Body assisted the main body in controlling the All-Wonder Dao Fire, while the Green Wood Dao Body and Black Water Dao Body manipulated the dao rune array. The White Metal Dao Body and the Yellow Earth Dao Body focused on refining the weapon embryo together.

At this moment, Lin Xun pushed his strength to the absolute limit, and a fierce, determined glint flashed in his dark eyes.

He knew he must not fail!

Otherwise, all the effort, the Kunlun nine Emperor weapons, dozens of other precious Emperor-grade weapons as well as the copper piece would be lost, completely destroyed!

Lin Xun took a deep breath and said, “Let’s see whether my unformed life-bound Emperor weapon is stronger, or whether your tribulation power is greater!”

Boom!

The tribulation clouds churned ominously, and suddenly a tribulation spear manifested, descending with terrifying force toward the weapon embryo within the All-Wonder Dao Fire.

The flames of the All-Wonder Dao Fire trembled violently, as if on the brink of collapse, while the weapon embryo, still in its unformed state, let out a heart-wrenching cry.

Lin Xun, controlling both his true body and the five dao bodies, was also caught in the impact. He was struck so hard that he nearly coughed up blood.

A flash of shock and horror crossed his brows. *How is the power of this tribulation so strong and destructive?*

Chapter 2285 Charge Out of the City

The tribulation clouds surged, emanating a bizarre aura of taboo.

Before Lin Xun could react, a series of blinding thunderbolts morphed into divine swords, descending toward the weapon embryo that was about to take shape within the All-Wonder Dao Fire.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

In the blink of an eye, the furnace-like All-Wonder Dao Fire trembled, on the verge of extinguishing. The power of the tribulation lighting swords exceeded Lin Xun’s expectations.

The most critical part was that, during this weapon forging process, Lin Xun had used his own dao as the formation and his Dharma as the pattern. The weapon embryo which was nearing completion was essentially fused with all of his cultivation.

Now with the tribulation striking, he was suffering the full force of its backlash. The minds of his true body and the five dao bodies were shaken as though struck by a tsunami.

The next moment, blood spurted from Lin Xun's mouth.

Despite that, he seemed unaware of it. Instead, he focused all his attention on controlling the All-Wonder Dao Fire, continuously deducing the dao rune arrays and refining the weapon embryo.

This was all he could do now.

Rumble!

The power of the tribulation clouds grew ever more terrifying, morphing into blinding arcs of lightning crackling with a taboo aura as they relentlessly bombarded the scene.

It was a despair-inducing sight. An Emperor-grade weapon still in its embryonic stage had provoked such a tribulation. This was an event nearly unheard of throughout history. If word of this spread, few would believe it.

Unfortunately, Lin Xun had no room for distraction. His gaze burned with unwavering determination, focused solely on the forging process. Despite the escalating tribulation, he gritted his teeth and pressed on, enduring the relentless barrage of heavenly lightning.

No matter what, the weapon refining could not fail!

Never!

However, as time dragged on, the tribulation only grew stronger, seemingly endless. Under its merciless assault, both the All-Wonder Dao Fire and the unformed weapon embryo began to show signs of collapse. Lin Xun's complexion grew paler by the moment, blood continuously trickling from the corners of his lips.

"Help him."

In the deepest part of the sea of fire beneath the secret realm, a low, faint voice resonated from within the colossal egg wreathed in endless phoenix flames.

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor, standing guard beside it, was startled. "Without my power, at the final moment of your rebirth, you will most likely..."

"Help him." echoed the voice once more, carrying an undeniable sense of authority.

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor took a deep breath before exhaling, “Is it because his mother is Luo Qingxun? Fine, since you’ve made your decision, I will go all out and assist him in forging this weapon!”

The next moment, her fiery red figure transformed into a divine flame radiating primal chaos energy and streaked into the sky like a blazing comet.

Boom!

Another bolt of tribulation lightning struck down, condensing into a massive hammer of pure destruction. Gray lightning flickered across its surface as it crashed down toward the All-Wonder Dao Fire.

By now, the furnace formed by the All-Wonder Dao Fire had already begun to crack, as if it could shatter at any moment. Could it withstand this final devastating blow?

In truth, at this point, Lin Xun had exhausted all his means. He could do nothing more but only endure.

At this moment—A magnificent, dazzling divine flame suddenly descended from the void, streaking past the incoming lightning hammer and surging directly into the furnace formed by the All-Wonder Dao Fire.

Boom!

The divine flame roared, and in an instant, the lightning hammer that emitted a bizarre and terrifying aura was incinerated, vanishing without a trace.

Lin Xun’s dark eyes narrowed. At that moment, Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor’s voice rang in his ears, “Just focus on refining the weapon. I will handle the tribulation!”

Almost immediately, the All-Wonder Dao Fire seemed to have been infused with divine powers. Flames billowed endlessly, burning with dazzling brilliance, vast and magnificent.

It should be mentioned that the true form of Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor was the innate dao fire of the Treasure Refining Furnace. Now that she was assisting the All-Wonder Dao Fire in refining a weapon, how could it be anything but extraordinary?

Lin Xun’s spirits lifted, and without hesitation, he concentrated fully on setting up the arrays and refining the weapon embryo.

Rumble—

Above, the tribulation clouds churned, sending down bolts of tribulation lightning one after another. However, the moment they descended, they were intercepted and neutralized by the power of Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor.

More astonishingly, once the tribulation power was dispelled, its essence was absorbed into the All-Wonder Dao Fire, thereby accelerating Lin Xun's weapon refinement at an unprecedented pace!

Within minutes, the weapon embryo was successfully refined!

It took the shape of a three-legged furnace with two handles, identical to the one formed by Lin Xun's Will Dharma Form in his mind-sea.

Intricate dao rune patterns adorned its outer walls, while within the furnace, countless dao rune symbols, born from various supreme arts, surged and interweaved.

Although still only in its embryonic state, it radiated an ancient and mysterious aura, as if it had existed since the dawn of time. An indescribable sense of immortality emanated from it, as though it contained the essence of eternity itself.

Of course, this was only the initial form. Its true nature would only fully manifest once the refinement process was complete.

At this moment, Lin Xun dared not let down his guard. He was wholly immersed in the refinement process. His mind was clear and he had cast aside all distractions.

As time passed, the embryonic furnace underwent continuous transformations, growing more refined, more perfected, unveiling an array of astonishing wonders...

.....

In the Thousand Flame Imperial City, the dao rune restriction arrays roared as the vast and ancient stronghold of the Celestial Phoenix World faced a relentless siege.

Beyond the city walls, fifty Emperors from the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans, led by Emperor Ancestor Wanliu and Emperor Ancestor Qianyin, unleashed an all-out assault.

Mighty dao arts surged like a tidal wave, and Emperor-grade weapons rained down like falling stars. Each strike exuded unparalleled brilliance as they bombarded the city with earth-shattering force.

Rumble—

The Ultimate Restriction Array encasing the city roared like a storm, surging with torrents of destructive power, setting off monstrous waves of divine light.

The scene was undoubtedly terrifying.

It had to be said that any of these Emperors possessed the power to incinerate mountains and boil seas with a flick of their finger.

Now, fifty of such terrifying figures had joined forces, wielding their boundless cultivation and Emperor-grade weapons in a coordinated assault.

There was absolutely no doubt that without the Divine Forge Imperial Clan meticulously laid out numerous and ancient arrays over the ages, Thousand Flame Imperial City would have long been reduced to ruins.

Even so, the Ultimate Restriction Array, like a massive screen of divine light, continuously neutralized the devastating blows from every direction, but it was visibly trembling under the sheer force of the attack. Within the city, unease spread. How much longer could the barriers hold?

Inside the city, Huang Cangtian's brows were deeply furrowed, his expression grim.

Near him, the old antiques of the Celestial Phoenix Clan wore similarly somber expressions, their hearts weighed down by a looming sense of unease.

"How long can the city's ultimate array hold?" asked Huang Cangtian.

"At most...three days." replied Lian Qingqi, the Grand Elder of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan, after a brief hesitation. He then added, "Lord, in my opinion, if it's purely a contest of strength, we have nothing to fear. But our real concern should be whether they'll send dao rune founders to break the array."

Huang Cangtian's frown deepened. The White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans had clearly come prepared. How could they not have accounted for the formidable defenses of the Thousand Flame Imperial City?

In truth, it was highly likely that they had already enlisted dao rune founders in secret, working to deduce and exploit the Ultimate Restriction Array's weakness!

"Clan Leader, according to the latest intelligence, the forces attacking now are merely the vanguard forces of the Black Tortoise and White Tiger Clans. Once the big shot from the Luo Clan arrives, they will then launch a full-scale assault."

Someone spoke anxiously, "If we just keep defending like this, the longer we drag things out, the worse our situation will become..."

Everyone knew this, but no one had a viable solution.

For a moment, the atmosphere grew heavy and oppressive.

What frustrated them the most was that while the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans bombarded the city with all their full strength, they also hurled taunts and threats, their words dripping with disdain.

Suddenly, a cold voice rang out, “Why don’t we take the fight outside the city?”

In the distance, Lian Jiuxiao was approaching with Xi, Xia Zhi, and Big Yellow.

The one who spoke was none other than Xi.

Huang Cangtian and the other old antiques of the Celestial Phoenix Clan were all taken aback, bewilderment flashing in their eyes.

However, when, Lian Jiuxiao explained that Xi and the others had arrived with Lin Xun, realization dawned on their faces.

“The city is already under siege by the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans. If we rush out recklessly now, we’ll most likely be surrounded.”

Huang Cangtian explained, “Now is not the time to go to war with them.”

He was waiting, waiting for the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor to awaken and be reborn! Only then might they have a chance to completely turn the tide.

Boom!

Just then, near the distant city wall, the Ultimate Restriction Array let out a deafening rumble, showing signs of collapsing.

“This is bad! They’re breaking through!” An old monster of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan who was responsible for maintaining the array cried out in alarm.

Everyone’s expression changed.

They had cracked the ultimate array.

The worst possible scenario was unfolding before their eyes.

“Then, we’ll just kill those trying to break the array.” Big Yellow spoke casually, its eyes gleaming with anticipation, eager for the taste of White Tigers and Black Tortoises.

Many objected, “No, if we leave the city to attack, we’ll only put ourselves in even greater danger!”

“Danger?” Big Yellow sneered, “I think you’re just overthinking things. Fine, I’ll do it myself.”

Xi's response was much more direct. Without a word, she shot toward the city wall that was about to be breached.

Seeing this, Xia Zhi and Big Yellow followed without hesitation.

"Nonsense! Do they really think we're cowards? We're doing this for their own good!" grumbled an old antique of the Celestial Phoenix Clan.

"Clan Leader, stop them quickly. If anything happens to them, how will we explain it to Lin Xun?" someone urged anxiously.

However, before Huang Cangtian could say anything, Xi, Xia Zhi, and Big Yellow had already charged out of the city.

"They..."

Everyone watching was both anxious and furious. At such a critical moment, they were still acting recklessly. If something went wrong, wouldn't the Celestial Phoenix Clan be forced to risk everything to save them?

Meanwhile, outside the city, thunderous cheers erupted:

"They've finally come out! Those cowards couldn't sit still any longer!"

"Quick, capture and kill them!"

"Hahaha, are all the warriors of the Celestial Phoenix Clan dead? They actually sent two women and a dog out to die?"

Emperor Ancestor Wanliu and Emperor Ancestor Qianyin burst into mocking laughter. When people were desperate, they tended to act foolishly!

The faces of Huang Cangtian and the others darkened..

Taking a deep breath, Huang Cangtian gave the order, "Fine, prepare for a rescue. No matter what, the three fellow daoists are fighting for our Celestial Phoenix Clan. We can't let them meet their end like this...Huh?"

However, before he could finish speaking, something outside the city took everyone by surprise!

Chapter 2286

Outside the City.

As soon as Xi and the others appeared, they immediately drew the attention of the three Emperors, provoking them to strike without hesitation.

Two of the Emperors were from the White Tiger Clan—one at the fifth realm and the other at the seventh realm. The third was a sixth realm Emperor from the Black Tortoise Clan.

Previously, these three Emperors had been overseeing the operation, protecting a group of dao rune founders from the two clans while they worked to break through the Ultimate Restriction Array of Thousand Flame Imperial City.

However, no one expected that before the array could be breached, two women and a dog would suddenly charge out...

“Die!”

An Emperor old man from the White Tiger Clan bellowed, his murderous intent radiating so fiercely it could easily crush the life out of any ordinary cultivator.

With a fierce swing of his giant halberd, he aimed directly at Xi.

“Allow me!” Big Yellow buzzed with excitement. The dog leapt into action first, slashing its claw through the air. A surge of light erupted, transforming into an enormous net that seemed to engulf the world, blocking the Emperor’s attack.

Suddenly, the old man and his giant halberd were ensnared in the net, trapped like prey.

A cold shiver ran down his spine, and his soul nearly fled his body. Only then did he realize that the seemingly ordinary mutt was an unimaginably powerful character.

Before he could even attempt to fight back, it was already too late.

Swoosh!

The net tightened, and in the blink of an eye, Big Yellow knocked the old man unconscious. It collected the fallen figure with a sense of satisfaction, as if it had just caught a rare delicacy. A white tiger that had been cultivating for who knew how long...

Saliva dripped from its mouth at the thought of it.

“No!”

A horrified, anguished scream rang from the other side.

Xi’s figure blurred as she swiftly crushed the neck of another Emperor from the White Tiger Clan with her slender, fair hands.

“Don’t just throw it, put it away!” Big Yellow quickly reminded her. A valuable catch like that should never be wasted.

Xi nodded and tossed the corpse over to Big Yellow.

Boom!

Meanwhile, not far away, Xia Zhi was locked in battle with a sixth realm Emperor from the Black Tortoise Lineage. Her spear pierced through his armor with precision, and blood sprayed across the sky.

With a swift flick of her wrist, she split the Black Tortoise Emperor’s body in two, and before it even hit the ground, Big Yellow quickly collected it.

“This is a thousand-year-old tortoise. It’ll make an excellent tonic when stewed!” Big Yellow’s eyes gleamed with excitement.

The experts from the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans outside the city suddenly felt a wave of dizziness. The siege, which had been relentless just moments before, fell eerily quiet.

Many of them stood frozen in place, stunned into silence.

In the span of just a few blinks, three Emperors had been slaughtered as easily as chickens!

One was captured alive, and two were killed!

It was a devastating blow to their morale, catching the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans completely off guard.

The two women and a dog, whom they had ridiculed, had now revealed their true power and terror!

“They...”

In the city, Huang Cangtian, who had already ordered a rescue if Xi and the others fell in danger, couldn’t help but gasp aloud.

The old antiques from both the Divine Forge Imperial Clan and the Celestial Phoenix Clans were left stunned. Were they not too fierce?

Many of them felt a deep sense of shame and embarrassment. They had never anticipated that Xi and the others would be so powerful.

Boom!

With a thunderous roar like the collapse of heaven and earth, Xi's graceful figure appeared like an illusion, intertwining with law powers. The ground trembled and cracked with each step she took.

From a distance, she appeared as though a divine being had descended upon earth, radiating boundless power.

"This is bad!"

The dao rune founders from the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans turned pale at the sight, instinctively preparing to flee. Unfortunately, before they could react, Xi raised her hand.

Endless dao light surged forth, roaring through the void, drowning the dao rune founders. Their souls shattered and scattered in an instant.

"Quick, suppress and kill them!"

In the distance, Emperor Ancestor Wanliu and Emperor Ancestor Qianyin bellowed at the same time, their faces livid.

Before their voices faded, they charged toward Xi, having realized that she was the greatest threat. If she wasn't stopped, the siege was bound to fail.

"Leave those two old guys to me. You handle the rest."

Xi's voice was cold, and her stunning face was devoid of emotions. Even though two Emperor Ancestor-level figures were targeting her, she didn't show a hint of panic.

"Kill!" Emperor Ancestor Wanliu roared, his voice shaking the heavens.

A blood-red sword cleaved the air, releasing endless laws and ominous visions, threatening to obliterate everything in its path.

At the same time, Emperor Ancestor Qianyin unleashed a purple palace lantern, which rained down billions of fiery rays, engulfing Xi.

The two had already resorted to their full powers!

Boom!

A war of unimaginable magnitude erupted, shaking heaven and earth.

What horrified everyone was that despite being under the attacks of two Emperor Ancestors, Xi did not falter or show any signs of being suppressed. Instead, with each of

her strikes, she crushed their attacks one after another, causing both Emperor Ancestors to grow increasingly grave.

Even Huang Cangtian and the others felt their heart churn, unable to remain composed.

A woman who could withstand the combined onslaught of two Emperor Ancestors...how terrifying must her strength be?

If they knew what had happened within the True Dragon Lineage not long ago, perhaps they wouldn't be so shocked.

After all, Lin Xun, Xi, and the others had fought their way into the Thousand Dragon Dao Palace. Had it not been for Ancestor Soul Slaying manipulating the origin law power of the world of the Dragon Palace, the True Dragon Lineage would have been unable to stop the invasion of Lin Xun and his group.

Now, outside Thousand Flame Imperial City, Xi found it no challenge to face off against two Emperor Ancestors.

"Die!" Big Yellow stretched out its four legs and leaped through the air, roaring, its fur glowing with infinite brilliance.

Bang!

Before a Black Tortoise Clan Emperor could even react, Big Yellow knocked him unconscious with a single paw and swiftly stored him away.

Their overwhelming, domineering presence caused a wave of gasps across the battlefield.

This time, the Black Tortoise and White Tiger Clans had dispatched a total of fifty Emperors, giving them an absolute numerical advantage.

Very quickly, a group of Emperors charged over to deal with Big Yellow together.

However, Big Yellow showed no fear. Instead, the dog was delighted. Grinning widely, its sharp fangs bared, and drool dripping from its mouth, it muttered. "This one can be braised, that one steamed, this one stir-fried, and that one deep-fried..." It didn't even slow down, continuing its 'hunting' spree.

With its strength, it could easily fend off the pursuit of Emperor Ancestors. Why would it care about a siege from characters who were at most at the eighth realm Emperor Stage?

Bang!

Within moments, an Emperor from the White Tiger Clan, voluptuous and as beautiful as a young woman, was knocked out by Big Yellow. "You'll make a perfect bone broth!"

Bang!

Before long, an especially fierce Black Tortoise Clan Emperor had his chest crushed...

“It’s just a dog! How can it be so terrifying?”

“Quick, everyone attack together!”

Angry shouts echoed across the battlefield as countless Emperors charged forward, attempting to overpower Big Yellow with sheer numbers.

Yet what sent chills down everyone’s spine was that Big Yellow never even gave them the chance to encircle it. Before the encirclement could tighten, it had already taken down one Emperor after another.

The brutal slaughter sent waves of despair ripping through the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans.

It was impossible to surround the dog.

Every time they tried to encircle it, Big Yellow would simply break through with unstoppable force, crushing its opponents one by one with ridiculous ease.

His rampage was even more shocking than Xi’s battle. After all, the ones falling were all powerful Emperors!

Perhaps the least conspicuous figure on the battlefield was Xia Zhi. Shrouded in darkness, she wielded her bone spear like an ethereal phantom, vanishing and reappearing like a flickering shadow.

Wherever she struck, her attacks were swift, precise, and lethal. Each enemy fell from a single blow before they could even react.

She killed her opponents with a single strike and vanished without the slightest hesitation!

Inside the city, Huang Cangtian, Lian Jiuxiao and the other experts from the Celestial Phoenix Clan and Divine Forge Imperial Clan wore complicated expressions.

Shock, amazement, disbelief, awe...all sorts of expressions.

None of them had expected Xi, Xia Zhi, and Big Yellow to unleash such carnage outside the city!

The once-dreaded armies of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans that were powerful enough to strike fear into any clan were now in utter chaos.

Though they boasted eight hundred thousand troops, only the fifty or so Emperors posed a true threat to them.

Of course, that was already a force that would have been a nightmare for most.

Now, their two strongest leaders, Emperor Ancestor Wanliu and Emperor Ancestor Qianyin, were being held back by Xi alone, while Big Yellow and Xia Zhi effortlessly crushed the remaining Emperors. One after another, they fell like withered leaves...

It was no exaggeration to say that Xi and the others had completely thrown the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans into disarray, with casualties mounting by the moment.

Someone suggested excitedly, “Clan Leader, we should seize this chance to break out and counterattack!”

All the old antiques of the Celestial Phoenix Clan turned to Huang Cangtian, anticipation in their eyes.

Striking now would be their best opportunity to destroy the enemy forces completely!

Huang Cangtian was visibly tempted. After a brief pause, he nodded. “Indeed, we can’t let the three fellow daoists fight alone. It’s time to show the power of our Celestial Phoenix Clan!”

Unfortunately, just as he was about to give the order, his expression dramatically changed. His gaze snapped toward the distant horizon.

In the far distance, a terrifying surge of auras was rapidly approaching,

Could it be that...the true elites of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans had finally arrived?

Huang Cangtian’s heart tensed up, and he immediately sent an urgent voice transmission, “Fellow Daoists, there has been an unexpected development—please return immediately!”

In truth, no warning was needed. The moment Huang Cangtian sensed the change, Xi, Big Yellow, and Xia Zhi had also noticed it.

“Let’s go.” Xi ordered, frowning. Without hesitation, she turned and left.

Big Yellow, caught up in its frenzy of ‘hunting,’ felt reluctant to leave. Upon seeing that Xia Zhi and Xi had already withdrawn, it had no choice but to follow.

Its unwilling expression was the final insult to their enemies, who were already ashamed and humiliated beyond words.

Use arrow keys (or A / D) to PREV/NEXT chapter

Chapter 2287 Betrayals

Xi, Xia Zhi, and Big Yellow's sudden retreat caught Emperor Ancestors Wanliu and Qianyin off guard.

Throughout their battle with Xi, a sense of unease had been creeping over them.

Watching Big Yellow and Xia Zhi relentlessly hunt down the Emperor-level figures only deepened their dread. Their expressions had long since turned ashen, their fury laced with disbelief.

No matter how unwilling they were to admit it, they knew the truth—if things continue as they were, the vanguard forces of the Black Tortoise and White Tiger Clans would be utterly wiped out in less than a quarter of an hour!

Fortunately, that did not happen.

The retreat of Xi, Xia Zhi and Big Yellow puzzled them at first, but realization quickly dawned on them. Their gazes snapped toward the distance.

At that moment, the entire battlefield seemed to freeze. Whether it was the Black Tortoise and White Tiger armies outside the city, or Huang Cangtian and the others in the city, all eyes turned toward the same direction.

The setting sun stained the sky a deep-blood-red hue.

Thousand Flame Imperial City stood bathed in golden light, its ancient towering buildings and magnificent landscape glistening beneath the solemn glow, casting an almost dreamlike illusion of peace.

Boom!

However, this tranquility was soon shattered.

The earth shook violently, and the air became thick with a murderous, blood-soaked aura

In the distance, a group of people appeared out of nowhere like a dark mass of thundercloud pressing down on the city.

Each individual in the group radiated divine majesty, their figures wreathed in the brilliance of the Emperor Stage. They resembled sovereigns patrolling the world, their presence alone enough to crush all obstacles before them.

Behind them, rows of cultivators stood in imposing formations, like a dragon emerging from the abyss. Their terrifying aura distorted the winds and clouds, shrouding the world in a suffocating gloom.

At the forefront stood dozens of figures, male and female, young and old, each emanating a boundless, commanding aura. There were no ordinary beings but instead a group of formidable Emperors!

Leading them were two men.

One was clad in a white robe and had a chilling expression. His tall, slender figure stood like a lone mountain peak thrusting into the heavens, exuding a terrifying murderous intent.

Bai Lingzhen!

Also known as Killing Emperor Lingzhen, the patriarch of the White Tiger Lineage!

Beside him stood an old man with sparse hair, his thin frame etched with deep wrinkles, as if he were at the end of his years. Yet, his green eyes gleamed with unfathomable depths, exuding a terrifying presence.

Wu Xiuxing!

Also known as Martial Emperor Xiuxing, the patriarch of the Black Tortoise Lineage!

At this moment, the two figures, like sovereigns descending upon the world, led a group of old antiques from their respective clans.

Huang Cangtian and the others grew increasingly grim. Were they preparing for an all-out assault?

The world fell into an eerie silence, tension thick in the air.

Both the Celestial Phoenix Clan and the Divine Forge Imperial Clan felt a growing sense of dread. The enemy's lineup was too terrifying and the difference in power between them was far too vast.

The arrival of the Emperors was a spectacle of unparalleled majesty. Their presence was enough to instill fear in even the most ancient of sects and clans.

The wrath of Emperors could make the sun and moon lose their brilliance, shatter the earth, and plunge all things into chaos. Though intangible, their power alone was enough to dictate life and death for the vast majority of beings in the world.

In ordinary times, Emperors were elusive, mysterious and supreme, ruling over their domains from the shadows. Their existence alone was a deterrent to invaders.

Now, the Emperors of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans surged out in droves. It felt as if the sky itself was collapsing, an unbearable pressure struck fear into the hearts of all.

A great battle was on the verge of eruption!

And today, Thousand Flame Imperial City, or perhaps the entire Celestial Phoenix World would experience earthshaking changes!

“Paying respect to Patriarch!”

“Paying respect to Patriarch!”

From the battlefield, Emperor Ancestor Wanliu and other powerful figures from the White Tiger Lineage, as well as Emperor Ancestor Qianyin and other powerful figures from the Black Tortoise Lineage, stepped forward to greet them. Their faces were brimming with excitement.

Reinforcements had arrived. The tide of battle was about to turn!

Bai Lingzhen’s gaze swept across the battlefield, his brow furrowing. “What are the casualties from the previous battle?”

The question caused Emperor Ancestor Wanliu and the others to shift uncomfortably.

“Patriarch, nine Emperors of our clan have fallen. From the Black Tortoise Lineage, eleven Emperors are dead... In addition, over ten dao rune founders have perished...” someone answered quietly.

Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and other high-ranking figures who had just arrived were stunned, barely able to believe what they were hearing.

“What happened?” Bai Lingzhen’s voice turned icy as his eyes narrowed.

Emperor Ancestor Wanliu sighed heavily, his face grim as he reluctantly revealed the truth.

“Two women and a dog?” Bai Lingzhen’s face darkened with fury upon hearing the details.

Not just him, but Wu Xiuxing and the others were also in shock. Two women and a dog had almost wiped out the vanguard forces that were led by two Emperor Ancestors, Wanliu and Qianyin!

Who could have believed it?!

The atmosphere outside the city grew unbearably tense.

Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing, and the others turned their cold, murderous gazes toward Thousand Flame Imperial City in the distance.

“Huang Cangtian, abandon the city and surrender now, and I will grant your Celestial Phoenix Lineage a chance to live. Otherwise, this city will be razed to the ground, and your entire clan will be wiped from existence!” Bai Lingzhen spoke indifferently, his voice thundering through the heavens, echoing in all directions.

Inside the city, Huang Cangtian’s expression remained icy, “Bai Lingzhen, my Celestial Phoenix Lineage does not cower so easily. If we are to fight to the death, then the outcome is far from certain!”

“In three days, the Seventh Elder of the Luo Clan will arrive in person. Does your Celestial Phoenix Lineage really want to resist?” Wu Xiuxing’s aged face held a trace of mockery as he gestured toward the tremendous forces surrounding the city. “Look for yourself, our Black Tortoise and White Tiger Clans have gathered here in full force. Against such power, your clan is just like an egg striking a boulder.”

“Old bastard, enough with the nonsense! If you have the guts, then come and kill!” Huang Cangtian snorted coldly.

Wu Xiuxing was unfazed by the insult. “Huang Cangtian, you know why we’re here. I’ll make it simple for you, Your Progenitor Ancestor must surrender if he wishes to awaken and survive. Otherwise, it’s not just our Black Tortoise and White Tiger Clans that won’t allow it, even the Luo Clan won’t either.”

His words echoed ominously over Thousand Flame Imperial City.

The faces of Huang Cangtian and other old antiques of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage darkened. The bastards indeed came to prevent their Progenitor Ancestor’s awakening!

Bai Lingzhen sneered, “We also know that in order to undergo a complete transformation, your Progenitor Ancestor has already refined the origin law power of your Celestial Phoenix World into the Phoenix Flame of Order. That means, Huang Cangtian, you no longer have control over it.”

His voice carried a chilling disdain as he continued, “Without that powerful weapon, what does your Celestial Phoenix Lineage have left to resist us? This fragile, broken city?”

“It looks like those guys came well-prepared,” Big Yellow muttered.

Back in the True Dragon World, Ancestor Soul Slaying had wielded the World Commanding Pearl, controlling the world's origin law power to wound and force both Xi and Big Yellow to retreat.

It seemed the Phoenix Flame of Order that Bai Lingzhen mentioned also functioned in the same as the World Commanding Pearl, granting control over the origin law power of the world of the Dragon Palace.

However, the Phoenix Flame of Order had already been refined by the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor, meaning Huang Cangtian and his people had no way of using it.

This was why Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and the others were so fearless.

At this moment, Huang Cangtian and other old antiques of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage were already shocked and enraged. Bai Lingzhen's words had struck at the core secrets of their clan, and they were secrets that should never be known to outsiders!

Someone had betrayed them, leaking their most guarded secret!!

Huang Cangtian took a deep breath, his eyes bore a determined look. "Then let me tell you this—even if every last member of the Celestial Phoenix Clan falls in battle, we will never let you have your way!"

"Oh? Is that so?" Bai Lingzhen sneered. He suddenly raised a hand and commanded, "Now, it's time for you all to prove yourselves!"

Before his voice faded—A sudden and shocking change erupted around Huang Cangtian!

An old antique of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage suddenly lunged forward, his palm striking out at Huang Cangtian's back with terrifying speed and force.

The attack came without warning, catching everyone completely off guard.

No one had expected that, at this most critical moment, one of their own would turn against them!

Bang!

Huang Cangtian was sent flying by the force of the strike, blood spraying from his mouth.

Just as the traitorous elder moved to capture him, a graceful figure flickered through the air. It was Xi. With a flick of her hand, divine light erupted, forcing the attacker backward.

Boom!

Before he could steady himself, Big Yellow followed up with a devastating strike, slamming him straight into the ground.

“Third Elder, you betrayed us?!”

“How could you turn against your own clan!”

Recognizing the attacker, the experts of the Celestial Phoenix Clan were shaken to the core. The one who had struck Huang Cangtian was none other than Third Elder Huang Youdao, an old antique at the eighth realm Emperor Stage.

“Why, Third Elder?!” Huang Cangtian also cried out in shock, his expression livid and his eyes about to spit fire.

Huang Youdao roared, his voice filled with frustration, “You still don’t understand? The only way our clan can survive is by surrendering to the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos, I did this for the future of our people!”

Comotions erupted, and the faces of the Celestial Phoenix Clan members turned grim.

Even Xi, Big Yellow, and Xia Zhi hadn’t anticipated that at such a critical moment, an old antique from the Celestial Phoenix Lineage would betray them!

Unfortunately, the treachery didn’t end there.

Swoosh!

Amidst the turmoil, a sword light suddenly shot through the air and before anyone could react, Lian Qingqi’s head was severed!

The gruesome sight struck Huang Cangtian and the others like a bolt of lightning. Only then did they realize that there wasn’t just one traitor in the clan!

Without hesitation, Xi and Big Yellow moved in unison, striking like lightning and capturing the culprit on the spot.

Unlike the Celestial Phoenix Clan, they had no emotional ties, allowing them to react decisively the moment the betrayal was exposed.

However, when the traitor’s identity was revealed, Huang Cangtian and the others looked even more devastated than before. Their faces were ashen, their eyes blazing with fury and disbelief, as if their souls had been shattered.

“Fifth Elder, you too?!”

Use arrow keys (or A / D) to PREV/NEXT chapter

Chapter 2288 Dao Annihilation Tribulation Light

Huang Canghai—the Fifth Elder.

His betrayal was shocking and devastating because he wasn't just any elder but also the younger brother of Patriarch Huang Cangtian!

Despite that, with a single stroke, he had slain Lian Qingqi.

Lian Qingqi wasn't just a renowned dao rune founder, but also the key to controlling the Ultimate Restriction Array that protected Thousand Flame Imperial City. His death meant that the city's defenses were now in peril!

“You bastard!”

Veins bulged on Huang Cangtian's forehead. In rage, he drew his sword and slashed toward Huang Canghai's neck. However, before his blade could strike, an old antique stepped in, restraining him.

“Patriarch, you mustn't. The Fifth Elder might be under enemy's control and he may not be acting of his own free will!”

With Huang Cangtian restrained, Huang Canghai let out a hoarse, bitter laugh. “Elder Brother, just kill me. Our Celestial Phoenix Lineage is doomed in your hands anyway. What difference does it make whether I live or die?”

“You...” Huang Cangtian trembled with rage, his hair and beard bristling, his eyes bloodshot.

The situation was already dire with the enemy at their gates, and now, with chaos erupting within their own ranks, it had become even worse.

Outside the city, Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and others looked on with amusement before bursting into mocking laughter.

Behind them, the White Tiger and Black Tortoise armies also cackled, their laughter echoing across the battlefield like a tidal wave.

Inside the city, the experts of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage and the Divine Forge Imperial Clan wore darkened expressions, their bodies shaking with anger.

“Traitors are more despised than enemies.” Big Yellow sighed. “If they're willing to lay down their lives for the enemy, then why not help them by sending them off?”

A chorus of voices objected, “No!”

Many refused to believe that Huang Youdao and Huang Canghai had betrayed them of their own free will. There had to be another reason, something beyond their control.

Huang Cangtian also hesitated.

Big Yellow snorted coldly and spoke in a deep voice, “With the enemy at our doorstep, if you don’t eliminate those two to restore order, then how can you expect your troops to have the morale to hold the line?”

Many glared at him with hostility. This was a matter of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage, why should an outsider interfere?

Shua!

Suddenly, Huang Cangtian swung his sword.

Before anyone could react, Huang Canghai’s head flew up, blood spraying across the air and splattering Huang Cangtian’s robes.

A stunned silence fell over the battlefield. The patriarch had executed his own younger brother!

“No matter who they are, traitors deserve death!” Huang Cangtian’s voice was cold, devoid of emotion. His gaze then shifted to Third Elder Huang Youdao. “I won’t waste my breath asking for explanations. The moment you betrayed us, you deserved to die!”

“You...you really...” Huang Youdao’s eyes widened in disbelief. He had thought the worst that could happen was being captured and imprisoned. Never had he imagined that Huang Cangtian would be so ruthless.

Shua!

Before he could finish talking, a sword flashed. His body crumpled to the ground, his face frozen in horror and disbelief even at death.

“At the brink of war, the last thing I wish is to turn my sword against my own people.” Huang Cangtian slowly withdrew his sword, his expression indifferent, his presence imposing.

All the warriors of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage and the Divine Forge Imperial Clan stood in place, shaken.

Boom!

The Ultimate Restriction Array surrounding Thousand Flame Imperial City trembled violently as the White Tiger and Black Tortoise armies unleashed a new wave of attacks.

Bai Lingzhen and Wu Xiuxing led their respective clans' old monsters into battle. As many as a hundred Emperors were striking at once. The power they unleashed was like a river bursting its banks, sweeping across the land, shattering the heavens, and threatening to annihilate everything in its path!

The Ultimate Restriction Array shook under the relentless assault, its light flickering ominously, teetering on the verge of collapse.

Without Lian Qingqi overseeing it, even though Lian Jiuxiao and the other old monsters of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan were pouring all their strength into maintaining it, they were barely holding on.

Their voices rang out in urgency, "Lord, we can't hold on much longer!"

Huang Cangtian looked grave. After a brief silence, he asked, "Have the younger generation of the clan been properly secured?"

Everyone nodded.

"Then it doesn't matter."

Huang Cangtian's voice was calm, but the determination behind them was absolute. "Our only hope lies with the Venerable Ancestor. Will you stand and fight with me until the end?"

"Of course!" The reply was resolute and everyone's eyes were filled with unwavering determination.

Huang Cangtian laughed loudly, "Good! Then let us, these old bones, fight with everything we have! If we must die today, let it be in battle, not on our knees!" His voice was filled with heroic defiance.

Unfortunately, the enemy's bombardment grew fiercer, each strike resounding like thunderclaps and each impact like the toll of a death knell, shrouding the battlefield in an air of suffocating despair.

Huang Cangtian turned to Xi and the others and said, "Fellow Daoists, please return to Divine Forge Workshop A1. The final line of defense must be entrusted to you."

The presence of traitors in the clan had shaken his trust in those around him.

"Do you really want to fight to the death?" Xi asked.

Huang Cangtian smiled, “Why not?”

Xi’s sharp, beautiful eyes swept across the battlefield. “There are hundreds of Emperors outside the city, but only nineteen Emperor Ancestors. Once we eliminate them, their defeat is inevitable.”

A heavy silence followed. No one doubted her logic, but the problem was that...

Those were nineteen Emperor Ancestors!

Even a single one could unleash world-shattering power, let alone nineteen of them.

It was no exaggeration to say that among the Emperor Stage, Emperor Ancestors stood at the pinnacle, reigning supreme over all Emperors!

In comparison, the Celestial Phoenix Lineage and Divine Forge Imperial Clan had only six Emperor Ancestors combined. At least in terms of numbers, they were at a complete disadvantage.

Of course, even with Xi and Big Yellow, they were still outnumbered!

Just as everyone thought that Xi was stating the obvious, she continued, “If I go all out, I can hold down at least five to seven Emperor Ancestors.”

There were audible gasps from the crowd. .

The weight of her words was terrifying. Upon recalling how she had battled two Emperor Ancestors, Wanliu and Qianyin, they realized that Xi was not the type to boast.

Big Yellow hesitated for a moment, then muttered, “I... well, maybe...at most...three?”

Its uncertainty drew skeptical looks, which irritated the dog. With a cold huff, it corrected itself, “Two is a sure thing. Three? No problem at all!”

“If needed, I can help you,” Xia Zhi added calmly.

Regardless of whether Xi, Big Yellow and Xia Zhi could truly manage such feats, their willingness to stand and fight stirred Huang Cangtian and the others deeply.

At this moment of life and death, these outsiders were stepping forward without hesitation. Compared to the Third Elder and Fifth Elder who had betrayed them, the contrast was striking! How would they not be moved?

“Thank you!” Huang Cangtian bowed.

The old antiques of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage and the Divine Forge Imperial Clan also bowed in unison.

Big Yellow, looking slightly uncomfortable, coughed and muttered, “Don’t read too much into it. We’re only doing this for that kid Lin Xun.”

Currently, Lin Xun was crafting his life-bound Emperor weapon inside Divine Forge Workshop A1. If the enemy broke through and disrupted the process, then it would be an unprecedented disaster.

In that sense, Big Yellow was absolutely right.

Rumble—

Meanwhile, the enemy's assault intensified, and the Ultimate Restriction Array of Thousand Flame Imperial City shuddered violently, its structure on the verge of collapse.

“If you don’t want the city to fall and give the enemy a chance to storm the Divine Forge Workshop, then now is the time to strike.” As Xi said that, she moved first, stepping out of the city with a graceful ease, showing not a shred of fear or panic.

Xia Zhi and Big Yellow followed.

Their unshaken composure sent a surge of blood through everyone’s veins. Without further thought, they all charged out after them.

“Kill!”

“At this point, there’s nothing left to discuss, just take down as many as possible!”

“Let’s go!”

With a roar, Huang Cangtian, along with a group of Celestial Phoenix Lineage old antiques, also rushed into battle.

Lian Jiuxiao and a group of old antiques from the Divine Forge Imperial Clan remained behind, working tirelessly to maintain the Ultimate Restriction Array within the city.

“They’ve come out,” Bai Lingzhen remarked in surprise

Wu Xiuxing chuckled, his tone calm and indifferent, “A cornered beast will always make a last-ditch struggle. They must realize their defeat is inevitable.”

Despite their indifferent comments, both reacted instantly. The moment Xi and the others appeared, they became the primary targets.

Rumble—

An earthshaking battle erupted without suspense, plunging the heavens and earth into chaos. Torrents of divine radiance raged across the battlefield, Emperor weapons clashing with devastating force. Blinding explosions of light painted the sky in a spectacle of destruction, as if doomsday had descended upon the world.

.....

Meanwhile, deep within the secret realm of Divine Forge Workshop A1.

Tribulation lightning cascaded like an endless waterfall, as if it would not stop until it obliterated the life-bound Emperor weapon that had yet to fully take form.

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor bore the brunt of the tribulation alongside Lin Xun. The relentless heavenly tribulation left her wounded as she fought to keep the weapon intact.

“How can this tribulation be so terrifying?”

Even Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor couldn’t hide her astonishment. She had once witnessed the calamity that had befallen the Treasure Refining Furnace when it forged the Kunlun nine Emperor weapons.

Back then, even the Treasure Refining Furnace had to sacrifice itself to preserve the nine weapons from destruction.

However, the tribulation Lin Xun faced now was even more terrifying.

Not only was its power greater, but there was also something inexplicably sinister about it, as if it wouldn't stop until the weapon was completely destroyed.

Lin Xun’s expression was solemn, his face pale as a sheet.

The refining process had reached the final, most critical moment, but due to the relentless interference of the lightning tribulation, it was impossible for the weapon embryo, already forged by the All-Wonder Dao Fire, to complete its final transformation.

Boom!

Deep within the churning tribulation clouds, a strange and ominous roar echoed. A streak of greyish tribulation light flashed, swirling with an eerie, taboo-like radiance. As it slowly took shape, Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor’s eyes widened in horror, her scalp tingling. “This...could it be the legendary Dao Annihilation Tribulation Light?”

Chapter 2289 Unparalleled Visions

Legend had it that at the dawn of chaos, Three Ultimate Tribulation Lights were born alongside it.

They were precisely Dao Annihilation, Spirit Severing, and Mind Forbidding.

Each possessed terrifying and mysterious powers. For instance, the Dao Annihilation Tribulation Light could utterly erase the cultivation of anything it touched, whether an object or a living being!

From what Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor knew, the Dao Annihilation Tribulation Light was an exceptionally rare tribulation, one that specifically targeted Emperor weapons. Throughout history, its appearance had been almost unheard of.

Lin Xun's hair stood on end. The gray tribulation light condensing in the depths of the tribulation clouds pulsed with an incredibly ominous aura. It was unlike any other tribulation lightning he had ever encountered

At this moment, the weapon forging had reached its most critical juncture. If he succeeded, the weapon embryo would undergo its final transformation.

If he failed...

All previous efforts would be for nothing!

Shua!

Suddenly, the Dao Annihilation Tribulation Light fully took shape. Like an ethereal strand of gray light, it streaked down from the depths of the clouds.

The All-Wonder Dao Fire roared as Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor fought with all her might. Blazing torrents of fire erupted to intercept the incoming tribulation.

Strangely, the gray tribulation light passed through the raging flames unhindered, as though it were slipping through mere illusions.

This is bad!

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor's expression dramatically changed.

Just as the gray tribulation light was about to strike the furnace formed by the All-Wonder Dao fire, something unexpected happened. A chain of law and order suddenly appeared out of nowhere.

Formed from pure purple flames, the divine chain was crystal clear and exuded a primordial radiance of law and order as it swirled gently through the air.

In an instant, the divine chain wrapped around the grey tribulation light, imprisoning it. Then like melting snow under the sun, the tribulation light disintegrated, dissolving into fine mist and drifting into the All-Wonder Dao Fire.

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor was utterly stunned. *The Phoenix Flame of Order?!*

How could she not recognize this power that was refined from the origin law power of the Celestial Phoenix World?

However, she never expected that at this final moment, the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor, who had not yet to fully awaken and complete his rebirth, would choose to intervene.

Not only that, but he also did not hesitate to activate the Phoenix Flame of Order!

“Are you insane? I have protected you for countless years, I will not let you fail at the very last moment of your awakening from nirvana!” Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor’s voice transmission was almost hysterical.

In the depths of the sea of fire beneath the secret realm, inside the fiery-red egg, a low and transcendent voice resonated, “My rebirth and nirvana should be my own doing. These external forces...they are my final shackles. If that’s the case, then it’s better to benefit him.”

Before Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor could react, a thunderous explosion shook her consciousness. A sharp pain struck her mind, and then she witnessed something that left her utterly shaken. The Phoenix Flame of Order was actually disintegrating inch by inch, breaking down into crystal clear droplets that poured into the furnace formed by the All-Wonder Dao Fire.

With each drop, it was like a celestial phoenix was being born, flapping its wings and soaring, its clear and melodious cry echoing across the heavens.

“You...you...you...” Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor stammered, completely dumbfounded.

When the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor used the Phoenix Flame of Order to neutralize the Dao Annihilation Tribulation Light, she had already lost her composure, nearly going mad.

Now, watching droplets of the power of the Phoenix Flame of Order pour into the All-Wonder Dao Fire, she was on the verge of losing her mind.

This was the origin power that the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor needed to complete his transformation and rebirth. Without the Phoenix Flame of Order, how could he be transformed from nirvana?!

Boom!

The All-Wonder Dao Fire roared violently, unleashing endless flames that rushed into the sky and incinerating the tribulation clouds above!

That sheer aura it released was terrifying, far beyond Lin Xun's comprehension.

In truth, at this moment, he had completely lost control of the All-Wonder Dao Fire. All he could do was watch the unprecedented scene unfold before him.

Boom!

Meanwhile, Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor turned into a mass of raging flames and roared out before falling into a stunned silence. She could only watch from the sidelines, her expression flickering between shock, disbelief, and turmoil, completely unable to calm herself.

This weapon refinement attempt was absolutely unprecedented!

First, they had smelted the Kunlun nine Emperor weapons along with dozens of other magical Emperor-grade weapons as divine materials. Then, Lin Xun used his dao as the formation, his Dharma as the pattern, integrating them all into the weapon embryo!

Then, an unprecedented tribulation had descended, forcing even Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor to act, and she was just barely able to withstand it until...

Until the arrival of the legendary Dao Annihilation Tribulation Light, which rendered her completely helpless. She believed the weapon refinement attempt was destined to fail, that it had defied the heavens and violated some unseen taboo...

Who would have thought that, in the final moment, the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor intervened, wielding the power of the Phoenix Flame of Order to dissolve the Dao Annihilation Tribulation Light?

In the end, not only did he integrate the power of this tribulation into Lin Xun's life-bound Emperor weapon, but even the Phoenix Flame of Order itself was also transformed into origin power and became a part of the weapon!

This series of extraordinary events was nothing short of breathtaking, making this weapon refinement attempt unlike any other in all of history.

At least, no record in the universe had ever shown the forging of a life-bound Emperor weapon triggering such incredible events!

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor could only wonder.

What will this final life-bound Emperor weapon look like after such an unbelievable sequence of events?

For Lin Xun, his emotions were a turbulent sea, rising and crashing in waves. He never imagined that the process of refining a weapon could lead to so many unexpected twists.

It all caught him completely off guard and all he could do was watch, powerless.

However, he could still sense that deep within his heart this weapon refinement attempt...was a success!

Boom!

At that moment, a thunderous rumble of the great dao echoed through the air, as if the dawn of primal chaos and the splitting of the universe were unfolding.

Then, the All-Wonder Dao Fire surged, as though it was under immense suppression, buzzing fiercely. A blinding light began to slowly emerge from within the flames.

With each inch of light revealed, the secret realm trembled and the radiance spreading through the void intensified.

The rumble of the dao sounded like deafening thunderclaps, and the wave of sacred light surged like the ocean's tides, shaking the entire secret realm. A heart-stopping aura slowly spread through the air.

In the end, Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor witnessed the birth of the life-bound Emperor weapon amidst these earth shattering changes. One glance was all it took to leave her in stunned silence.

.....

Meanwhile, above Divine Forge Workshop A1, in the depths of the sky, an array of miraculous visions unfolded.

Great dao flowers bloomed, torrents of divine light cascaded like waterfalls, auspicious and sacred sounds echoed across the heavens, and visions of a starry sky flickered in and out of existence...

The various unfathomable visions seemed to be expounding the profound mystery of the great dao.

Finally, the visions combined to form a cauldron, surrounded by billions of magnificent lights and endless blooming flowers, all accompanied by ethereal music...

This cauldron, dominating the eternal expanse of stars, stood as the sole immortal and eternal existence in the endless years.

The scene alarmed even those fighting fiercely outside the city. Whether it was Xi, Xia Zhi, Big Yellow, Huang Cangtian, or the old antiques from the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans, they all sensed the inexplicable phenomenon.

Has Lin Xun succeeded in forging his own life-bound Emperor weapon? The same thought crossed the minds of Xi, Xia Zhi and Big Yellow.

“Could it be...that the Venerable Progenitor of our clan has awakened?” Huang Cangtian and the others were trembling inwardly, thinking that such an earth-shaking phenomenon might signal the return of the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor.

“It’s definitely not a good sign!” Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and other old monsters from the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans exchanged anxious glances, sensing an ominous feeling.

They also were beginning to suspect that the long-dormant Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor was on the verge of awakening.

However, before either side could investigate, the massive cauldron image in the depths of the sky suddenly transformed into a dao sword.

What kind of dao sword was it?

It seemed to embody the very essence of order, terrifyingly sharp, its blade flowing with the aura of chaos and eternity. With a single sweep, it could crush the starry sky and tear through the void, as if it could sever the shackles of space itself and the rise and fall of endless eras!

Boom!

A piercing pain struck everyone’s eyes, as if their souls were being slashed. A bone-chilling coldness surged through their hearts.

By the time they regained their senses, the strange phenomenon in the sky had vanished.

For a moment, it felt as if everything they had just witnessed was nothing more than an illusion.

However, deep down, they all knew it was real!

“Kill! Storm the city!” Bai Lingzhen roared, his voice shaking the heavens and earth.

Xi, Huang Cangtian, and the others were already under siege. Though not yet in a desperate situation, the pressure was immense.

After all, the enemy side included nineteen Emperor Ancestors. How could such a siege be ordinary?

If not for Xi holding off multiple Emperor Ancestors alone, their predicament would have been far worse.

Now, with Bai Lingzhen's command, the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans intensified their assault. Hundreds of Emperors attacked at full-force. And the Ultimate Restriction Array of Thousand Fire Imperial City finally collapsed.

In an instant, light rained down like a raging tide. The final barrier protecting the city was gone.

Huang Cangtian and the others turned ashen-faced. If the formation was broken, the Divine Forge Workshop was in grave peril!

"Now that things have come to this, we can only fight with all we have and leave the rest to fate! Don't let your will waver!" Big Yellow shouted, worried that Huang Cangtian and the others' fighting spirit would be affected and they would fall into disarray.

Huang Cangtian took a deep breath. He knew the weight of the moment. His eyes burned red with determination as he roared, "Kill! Fight them to the death!"

Rumble!

The battle grew fiercer and could even be described as tragic.

Without the Ultimate Restriction Array's protection, the once vast, majestic Thousand Flame Imperial City crumbled like decayed wood, unable to withstand a single blow. In an instant, countless streets and towering buildings were reduced to ashes.

Despite that, no one could mourn the destruction of the city.

This was because the White Tiger and Black Tortoise armies had flooded into the city like an unstoppable tide, launching a merciless slaughter upon the Celestial Phoenix Lineage and Divine Forge Imperial Clan.

There was no stopping them.

Xi, Xia Zhi, Big Yellow, Huang Cangtian and others were already locked in battle, struggling against terrifying figures like Bai Lingzhen and Wu Xiuxing. No matter how they fought, they couldn't break free to stop the massacre unfolding before their eyes.

What was worse was that, with the city breached, waves of Emperors from the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans had already taken the opportunity to break through and were charging toward Divine Forge Workshop A1!

At this moment, the situation had become unimaginably dire!

Chapter 2290 Phoenix Flame of Order

Lin Xun had no idea how great a commotion the strange phenomenon caused by his weapon refinement had set off outside Thousand Flame Imperial City.

At this moment, his gaze was fixed on the life-bound Emperor weapon emerging from the All-Wonder Dao Fire, his face flickering with shock and amazement.

It was an ancient three-legged, two-eared cauldron, exuding an eternal and sacred aura.[1]

The walls of the cauldron were adorned with streaks of great dao power, swirling like dragons, interweaving into a radiant shower of law power. These currents of power shifted and surged, evolving into profound visions such as the sun, moon and stars orbiting in harmony, mountains and rivers stretching into infinity. Time flowed endlessly, the laws of the universe endured, guiding the ceaseless transformation of all existence.

Just a simple cauldron, yet it seems to encompass the mysteries of the cosmos!

Brilliant divine light gushed from its mouth, cascading like a waterfall, while countless symbols of dao arts emerged, flickering in and out of existence as if projecting the laws of the universe itself.

This cauldron was beyond extraordinary. From a distance, it no longer felt like a life-bound Emperor weapon, but rather an incarnation of the great dao. Its supreme presence surged forth, striking awe into the hearts of all who gazed upon it.

Suspended in the void, the cauldron's mere presence caused the entire secret realm to tremble while the surrounding air buzzed, as if bowing in submission.

“There is more to this cauldron than meets the eye!”

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor murmured in a daze, her flawless face filled with shock and astonishment.

She could sense that within this eternal cauldron lay an unfathomable and terrifying aura, like an unparalleled sword sealed at the depths of an abyss. If released, it could tear the heavens apart!

Sure enough, in the next instant, a terrifying vision unfolded within the cauldron. A hazy sword shadow emerged, like the dawn of chaos.

Although it was just a shadow, its razor sharp aura seemed capable of crushing the starry sky and severing the ages!

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor let out a muffled grunt as she felt a sharp sting piercing her eyes making it feel as if her soul was being sliced apart.

Her shock deepened. If a mere sword shadow already possessed such devastating power, then how terrifying would the sword hidden within the cauldron be if it truly emerged?

Meanwhile, Lin Xun stood in a daze, his heart stirring with an indescribable sensation. It was as if the cauldron before him was a part of him—an extension of his cultivation. With a single thought, he could control it as effortlessly as his own limbs, unleashing its boundless might!

“Come here,” Lin Xun beckoned.

The cauldron transformed into a stream of light, streaking through the void before settling in his palm. The glow around it faded, the dao light dispersed, and its true form was finally revealed—ancient and unadorned.

Inside, chaos churned with faint wisps of flame swirling in its depths, adding to its mysteriousness.

However, through Lin Xun’s perception, he could tell that a sword was resting within the cauldron, hidden in the mists of chaos, nourished by peculiar strands of purple flame.

Feeling this, Lin Xun’s tense mind finally eased, as if a great weight had been lifted from his shoulders. A deep breath later, he relaxed completely.

This was a cauldron that nurtured a sword!

This was the weapon refinement path Lin Xun had ultimately chosen after countless ideas and deductions at the very beginning of the process.

The root of his great dao was like chaos—boundless and unfathomable. Like a furnace—tempering all things. Like a cauldron—encompassing and eternal. Unprecedented throughout the ages, it was unique in all of existence.

The dharma art he had created, the Great Dao Furnace Art, was a manifestation of his cultivation, integrating thousands of daos and encompassing thousands of arts.

Even after stepping into the Emperor Stage, his spirit and will had condensed into a furnace cauldron, like an indestructible and eternal vessel that sat within his mind-sea.

Naturally, his initial thought had been to forge a cauldron as his life-bound Emperor weapon, as it aligned perfectly with his dao.

However, after countless deliberations and reflections, a new idea emerged.

The cauldron could suppress all heavens and worlds. Not only did it possess both offensive and defensive capabilities, but at its core, it also integrated all daos and commanded all arts.

Yet, what if a sword could be nurtured within the cauldron?

The sword was the most lethal force in existence.

Sword dao was the most ruthless path under the heavens.

To raise a dao sword within the cauldron would be to complement its power in every way—tempering its attacks to be sharper and its strikes to be deadlier.

In short, the life-bound Emperor weapon that Lin Xun had envisioned was one that embodied both unparalleled offense and defense.

Its attack—invincible.

Its defense—unshakable!

The cauldron before him perfectly embodied this unique power. It stood unshakable, capable of suppressing both past and present. Within it, the dao sword radiated an unparalleled destructive force!

This cauldron could be called a sword cauldron!

The most mysterious thing was that the cauldron was like a scabbard, sheathing the dao sword within. Together, they formed a unified whole, complementing and reinforcing each other in perfect balance.

At the same time, Lin Xun discovered that the dao sword within the cauldron was being nurtured by strands of purple divine flames, yet it was also sealed!

Those strands of flames were like chains of order, restraining the full power of the dao sword. Without them, its might would not be like it was now.

Lin Xun's eyes flickered as he recalled a crucial moment during the weapon refinement process. At the final juncture, it was that purple divine flame of order that had dissolved the gray tribulation light!

Now, the dissolved power of the gray tribulation had been integrated into the sword cauldron, while the purple divine flame had transformed into some kind of shackles, binding the dao sword within.

At this moment, Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor's gaze grew complex. She was reminded by the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor and that allowed her to grasp the true secret of Lin Xun's sword cauldron.

After a brief silence, she spoke, "That's the origin power of the Celestial Phoenix World, refined into the Phoenix Flame of Order by the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor. At that critical moment, it was this flame that helped you dissolve the power of the Dao Annihilation Tribulation Light..."

Lin Xun's heart trembled as realization dawned upon him.

Phoenix Flame of Order!

The origin power that governed the law and order of a world!

This kind of power was not unfamiliar to him. He had personally wielded the origin law power of the Nirvana of Transcendence.

Similarly, the World Commanding Pearl in Ao Xingtang's possession was also the origin law power of the world of the Dragon Palace.

However, never had he imagined that the key to successfully refining of his own life-bound Emperor weapon would be the Phoenix Flame of Order, nor that this origin power would be integrated into the sword cauldron, acting as both a seal and a source of nourishment, tempering and refining the dao sword within!

According to Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor, in the years to come, the more Phoenix Flame of Order the sword cauldron absorbed, the more terrifying its transformation would become.

After all, the Phoenix Flame of Order was the origin power of the Celestial Phoenix World—how could its power not be extraordinary?

As Lin Xun gradually calmed his thoughts, a question surfaced in his mind, "Has the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor awakened?"

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor shook her head. "He is still one step away."

She did not reveal the deeper truth to Lin Xun. The Phoenix Flame of Order had originally been the key power to the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor's final transformation through nirvana. Without it, could he still complete his transformation...?

That was the crux of the problem!

“Now that your life-bound Emperor weapon has been successfully forged, take this time to replenish your strength before the enemy arrives,” Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor sighed.

Enemies!

Lin Xun’s black eyes narrowed coldly. With a turn of his palm, the sword cauldron quickly disappeared into his body and settled within his True Self Emperor World.

Then, he sat cross-legged and began to meditate.

“Time is pressing, I will assist you.” With a flick of her sleeve, Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor unleashed a torrent of crystal clear primal chaos current, cascading like a waterfall and enveloping Lin Xun.

The moment it surged into his body, an unmatched life force spread through his limbs and bone, rejuvenating him at an astonishing speed. His exhaustion vanished, and his depleted energy rapidly recovered.

Lin Xun couldn’t help but gasp in shock. *What powerful primal chaos power!*

He could even feel his cultivation rising at a speed visible to the naked eye!

“Focus on your training. Don’t waste the power of this Primal Chaos Essence,” Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor’s voice rang out.

Only then did Lin Xun realize what he was absorbing and refining: Primal Chaos Essence, a treasure even Emperor Ancestors would covet to the point of madness!

Without hesitation, he calmed his mind and focused entirely on refining its power.

Meanwhile, Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor sent a voice transmission, her tone filled with complex emotions, “An eternity of slumber and rebirth..in the end, it has benefited this kid instead. What...were you thinking?”

In the depths of the sea of fire beneath the secret realm, a transcendent, ancient voice echoed from the colossal egg wreathed in purple phoenix flames.

“I have already said that after endless cycles of rebirth and transformations, I have fully comprehended one truth. To take the final step, I must relinquish my reliance on eternal forces and external objects. In other words, the Phoenix Flame of Order was the last chain shackling me from completing my transformation through nirvana.

“Now that I have used it to aid Luo Qingxun’s son. I feel nothing but relief. There is no regret, only contentment.”

“This...could this be what they call fate...” Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor couldn’t help but frown. “But if you fail, won’t these endless years be in vain?”

The Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor replied calmly, “No, I can feel it. This rebirth through nirvana is far from over, but...

“The path of nirvana itself will completely change, evolving into something more mysterious, more unknown than ever before. If I succeed, my cultivation will surely surpass all peers across time and eternity. If I fail...I will simply be lost in the unknown cycle of rebirth...”

His cryptic statement left Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor speechless.

A completely new path of nirvana?

Surpassing all peers across time and eternity?

What...did that mean?

The voice of the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor resonated once more, “Huo Liu, can you do me one last favor?”

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor shot a glance at Lin Xun, and in the blink of an eye, she rushed toward the depths of the sea of fire beneath the secret realm. Looking at the colossal egg surrounded by purple flames, she spoke solemnly, “You know I will always help you no matter what you ask of me.”

The Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor’s voice echoed, “For countless years, you have stood by my side, acting as my guardian. Now, I simply wish to do something for you. You cannot refuse this request.”

Before his voice had faded, a surge of magnificent purple fire erupted from the egg, enveloping Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor.

Her expression dramatically changed as she cried out, “This is all of your cultivation! How can you give it all to me? No! I don’t want it!”

However, no matter how she struggled, the purple divine flames continued to consume her, and she could not escape.

The voice of the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor rang out once more with a trace of warmth in his tone, “Only by severing the karmic path of the past life can true rebirth through nirvana occur. Huo Liu, we have shared our fates since the primeval era. From

now on, I will continue to accompany you with my cultivation, guarding you. Now, I have no other worries...”

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor’s eyes reddened, her body trembling, completely overcome with emotion. *This guy...he is still as domineering as ever, forcing me to accept his will without even giving me a chance to refuse!*

1. See this for some pictures 📖

1. [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ding_\(vessel\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ding_(vessel)) 📖

Chapter 2291 Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron

Within minutes, Lin Xun’s cultivation already soared to the perfect third realm Emperor Stage, yet the Primal Chaos Essence bestowed by Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor was only halfway refined.

This alone was proof of why Primal Chaos Essence was so coveted—even Emperor Ancestors would go mad for it.

At this rate, Lin Xun was certain it wouldn’t take long before he felt the signs of a breakthrough.

However, at that very moment, the entrance to the secret realm suddenly shook violently, as if struck by an unimaginable force.

Lin Xun’s eyes snapped open, his meditation interrupted. In an instant, an invisible supreme pressure rippled outward from his body.

His gaze turned sharp as he looked into the distance. “Luo Jia.”

In the past days, Luo Jia had been standing there, silently witnessing Lin Xun refining his life-bound Emperor weapon. The process had left her deeply stunned.

Hearing Lin Xun call her name, she suddenly snapped out of her chaotic thoughts, as if waking from a dream. “Brother Lin, what’s the matter?”

“The enemy has arrived. We can’t stay here any longer. I’ll have to trouble you for a bit.” As Lin Xun spoke, he flicked his sleeve, and a beam of light shot out, enveloping Luo Jia before pulling her into the Dao Endless Pagoda.

Boom!

The entrance to the secret realm was breached. A terrifying flood of dazzling light surged in like a dam bursting, sweeping across the space with mighty force.

With it came a group of imposing figures—Emperors from the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans.

“Hurry, this is where the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor is in deep slumber. Once we destroy this place, he will never be able to achieve rebirth from nirvana!” someone bellowed excitedly.

“Is he the only one here?” Countless eyes instantly locked onto Lin Xun, filled with murderous intent.

More scanned the surroundings, clearly searching for signs of the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor’s presence.

“Don’t waste time, kill the kid first!”

Just as several figures were about to strike, an old man in daoist robes, exuding the demeanor of a sage, raised his hand to stop them.

“Oh, that’s right, you must be Lin Daoyuan? I had heard of your fame when we came here.”

He scrutinized Lin Xun with burning eyes and suddenly let out a chuckle, “Now, you can see that Thousand Flame Imperial City has already fallen. It won’t be long before the Celestial Phoenix Lineage is erased from the world. If you wish to keep living, I advise you to submit to our Black Tortoise Lineage. I promise you will be treated most generously!”

The surrounding Emperors suddenly grasped Lin Xun’s true identity, their gazes locking onto him as if he were the most coveted prey in the world.

Lin Daoyuan!

He was a legendary weapon crafter who had shaken the entire Celestial Phoenix World not long ago. It was said that every Emperor-grade weapon forged by his hands were of the supreme-grade!

What was even more astonishing was his unparalleled weapon forging speed. On average, he could forge two Emperor-grade weapons per day, and not once had he ever failed!

Such a master of the craft was a priceless asset that any major faction would go to great lengths to claim.

“I’ll take him back to the White Tiger Lineage and have him forge an Emperor-grade weapon for my clan!”

A man exuding a fierce aura stepped forward, his eyes burning with a dangerous light, “Otherwise, I would rather kill him here and now than let him fall into the hands of another faction!”

“Yes, that’s the only option!” The other White Tiger Lineage Emperors nodded in agreement.

The Black Tortoise Emperors’ expressions, led by the old man in daoist robes, instantly darkened.

“Apologies, but Lin Daoyuan must come with our Black Tortoise Lineage today. If your White Tiger Lineage dares to take him by force, you should be prepared to face the consequences!” The old man’s voice was calm yet unyielding.

The fierce-looking White Tiger Emperor’s face twisted with rage. He jabbed a finger toward Lin Xun and growled, “Lin Daoyuan, come with me now. I promise that no one here will lay a hand on you. Refuse and I will kill you on the spot!”

“You dare!” The old daoist’s eyes turned ice-cold. “If my Black Tortoise Lineage can’t have him, then no one else will!”

It escalated in an instant. The Emperors of the two clans glared at each other like drawn swords, their aura clashing and filling the air with suffocating tension.

Meanwhile, Lin Xun stood there, his dark eyes cold as frost. A wave of absurdity welled up within him. *What do these bastards think I am?*

Some kind of prey they can claim and kill at will?

Boom!

Suddenly, a White Tiger Lineage Emperor could no longer hold back and lunged forward.

It was a burly, imposing man. With a flicker of movement, he shot toward Lin Xun, his hand reaching out like an iron claw. “If you dare resist, I will tear you apart alive!”

“You have a death wish!” The daoist-robed man’s expression darkened. He couldn’t just stand by and let the White Tiger Lineage seize their prey. But just as he was about to act, an unexpected scene unfolded before his eyes.

Lin Xun moved.

With a casual motion, he reached out and caught the burly man as if grasping a helpless chick.

Then, with a slight pull—*Si!*

The burly man, a fourth realm Emperor, was torn in half like a rag, blood pouring down like a waterfall.

Lin Xun tossed the corpse aside like trash.

He tore an Emperor apart with bare hands!

This gruesome scene sent chills down the spines of Emperors of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans, their expressions twisting in shock and horror.

The fierce-looking man roared, “Quick, attack together, capture him first!”

“Yes, capture him first!” bellowed the daoist-robed old man, realizing the danger.

Boom!

The Emperors of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans attacked without hesitation. Some summoned their Emperor weapons while others activated their secret arts, unleashing terrifying waves of destructive power.

Any Emperor alone could incinerate mountains, boil seas and destroy the land, let alone a group of them attacking in unison.

This was a force capable of striking despair into the heart of even veteran Emperors!

“You’re courting death. Today, I’ll use your lives as a sacrifice to temper my Emperor weapon.” Lin Xun’s lips curled into a cold, ruthless arc.

Buzz!

A blinding radiance erupted from the ground beneath his feet. A cauldron radiated a terrifying might that seemed capable of suppressing the heavens themselves.

As it spun through the air, the combined attacks from all directions were instantly shattered, dissolved, and obliterated!

The cauldron was unshakable!

Everyone’s pupils contracted in shock.

Among them were seventeen Emperors, none weaker than the second realm Emperor Stage, while the strongest, including the fierce-looking man and the daoist-robed old man, had reached the seventh realm Emperor Stage. They were already considered among the pinnacle of the Emperor Stage.

Yet now, their combined attacks had been effortlessly blocked by a cauldron!

Before they could even process the mindblowing reality, Lin Xun struck without hesitation.

“Slash!”

With the clang, a dao sword shot forth from the cauldron, its brilliance resembling a river of stars cascading across the heavens. As it descended, terrifying killing intent swept across the battlefield. Faintly, within the sword’s radiance, the sun, moon and stars seemed to stir.

What kind of sword was that?

Its sharpness was unimaginable. Its power was boundless. It felt as if it could cleave the sky into two and sever the rise and fall of the world itself!

In an instant, a scream tore through the battlefield, An Emperor standing at the forefront was directly struck, his body crushed by the sword qi, reduced to nothing but drifting ashes.

Chaos erupted. Shouts of shock and panicked cries filled the air.

“Hurry, kill him together!”

“Kill”

The fierce-looking man and the daoist-robed old man led the Emperors in a frenzied assault against Lin Xun, unleashing their full might.

Unfortunately, no matter how formidable their Emperor weapons were, or how dazzling their arts appeared, they were all shattered and dissolved one after another by the cauldron before Lin Xun, like an unshakable force of destruction.

Amidst the chaos, a dao sword flickered across the battlefield, following Lin Xun’s order. It set off a relentless massacre.

“Slash!”

“Slash!”

“Slash!”

Each time Lin Xun’s voice rang out, an Emperor perished on the spot, their spirit utterly annihilated. None survived.

His ruthless, domineering slaughter was like crushing rotten wood—unstoppable, unparalleled, and absolute!

Countless Emperor-grade weapons roared into the air, desperately attempting to stop the dao sword's merciless destruction. However, the moment they clashed, they were instantly reduced to a rain of shattered light.

Before the dao sword, the Emperor weapons wielded by the Emperors of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans were as fragile as paper, unable to withstand even a single strike.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

In the battlefield, Emperor-grade weapons were constantly shattered and exploded one after another, mingling with agonized screams and desperate wails.

Emperors burst apart like firecrackers, their blood splattering across the battlefield as their bodies collapsed in an instant.

It was pure carnage!

Even with seventeen Emperors joining forces, even with seventh realm Emperors among them, it was far from enough.

Lin Xun never moved from his original spot. With the cauldron and sword, he was invincible in attack and unshakable in defense, reaping the souls of those Emperors!

Boom!

Before long, the fierce-looking man's armor and treasures shattered simultaneously, and in the next instant, Lin Xun's sword cleaved him in half, ending him on the spot.

At this moment, only one figure remained standing—the daoist-robed old man. His face was twisted in terror, his soul nearly fleeing from his body.

The moment he saw the fierce-looking man fall, the last of his fighting spirit crumbled. He spun around and fled, bolting like a panicked stray dog.

However, with a flash of light, a streak of scarlet blood shot into the air, and the daoist-robed old man, a seventh realm Emperor, was cleaved at the waist, killed on the spot.

At this moment, all seventeen Emperors had been slaughtered beneath Lin Xun's Emperor weapon, reduced to ashes. Not a single one survived!

Furthermore, it had all happened in an instant.

Clang!

The dao sword let out a clear hum as it returned to the cauldron, then settled into Lin Xun's hand.

"From today on, you shall be known as...Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron!" Lin Xun's dark eyes shone with profound depth.

Integrate thousands of daos, derive thousands of arts, unprecedented through all eternity, the sole existence across the heavens!

Buzz!

The Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron quivered as though celebrating its new name, brimming with spiritual intelligence.

Lin Xun couldn't help but anticipate the day when the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron would transform and give birth to a weapon spirit. What kind of brilliance would it radiate then?

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Suddenly, the space around him rippled and warped, and figures began to rush into the secret realm. All of them were Emperors.

Clearly, they had arrived too late.

Upon seeing Lin Xun standing alone in this secret realm, the seven Emperors from the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans immediately felt a bad feeling.

Before they could make sense of the situation, Lin Xun launched a killing spree without hesitation.

Boom!

The Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron roared as billions of rays of light shot out. The sheer power it unleashed was enough to plunge the world into chaos.

Lin Xun spoke leisurely, "Today's battle will allow you to test your sharp blade for the first time and drink Emperor's blood to your heart's content!"

Clang!

The dao sword roared out from within the cauldron, its sharpness unmatched as its clear hum echoed through the nine heavens, distorting the wind and darkening the skies.

Chapter 2292 Kill With a Snap of the Fingers

The dao sword whistled through the air like a streak of lightning, its razor-sharp sword qi tearing through the sky with unstoppable force.

The seven Emperors, caught off guard and scrambling to respond, quickly fell into chaos.

Pu!

In the blink of an eye, an Emperor was beheaded as the boundless sword qi swept across the battlefield, obliterating his body and reducing it to ashes.

Bang!

Soon after, a green spear was severed in two, and its wielder let out a final, anguished roar as the sword pierced through his forehead, ending his life on the spot.

Amidst this completely one-sided massacre, Lin Xun truly grasped the terrifying power of the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron.

One word came to mind—Strong!

Not only did wielding this treasure allow him to unleash his full potential, but it also raised his combat strength to an entirely new level!

Suddenly, a thought flashed through Lin Xun's mind: *What if I execute the Taixuan Sword Scripture using the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron?*

Rumble!

Without hesitation, the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron unleashed a storm of sword qi that blazed with dazzling radiance. In an instant, it morphed into a terrifying sword array, surging with destructive force as it descended upon the battlefield, covering the sky and the earth!

Suddenly, a deafening rumble shook the air. When the blinding light and swirling smoke finally cleared, three of the five remaining Emperors had been annihilated. Only two remained standing, but both were gravely wounded!

Before they could react, the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron flickered once more. With a final slash, their lives were reaped on the spot!

“If I activate a sword dao inheritance through the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron, its power is twice that of a normal attack!”

This realization made Lin Xun draw a deep breath.

The reason quickly became clear—The Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron had been forged from countless divine materials including the Kunlun nine Emperor weapons.

In other words, from the moment of its birth, it already possessed the boundless mystical abilities of those legendary Emperor weapons.

For instance, the Dao Immeasurable Bottle had the ability to double the power of an attack!

As this thought settled, excitement surged through Lin Xun’s heart.

“Has Thousand Flame Imperial City fallen completely? I wonder how Xi, Xia Zhi and the others are doing...”

Without wasting a moment, Lin Xun strode out of the secret realm.

Rumble—

The instant he stepped outside, a deafening roar split the heavens, shaking the world as if the sky was collapsing and the earth shattering. A suffocating aura of destruction wreaked havoc across the land.

As Lin Xun’s spirit sense spread, he found that the once vast and magnificent Thousand Flame Imperial City was now in ruins.

What had once been grand and orderly streets, woven together like a vast spiderweb, were reduced to rubble. The towering buildings that had once stood in neat, majestic rows had crumbled into dust.

The air was thick with choking smoke and swirling debris. The once glorious imperial city now lay in utter ruin.

“Kill!”

“Kill!”

“Kill!”

From the far distance, war cries echoed like the roars of gods and demons. The sky was ablaze with terrifying dao light, Emperor-grade weapons streaked across the sky like lightning and crashed like thunder, shaking the battlefield with their might.

Additionally, across the ruined city, experts from the Black Tortoise and White Tiger Clans rampaged like a tidal wave, mercilessly hunting down any survivors.

The scene was apocalyptic. Destruction, carnage, and ruthless slaughter filled every corner.

Lin Xun's heart tensed.

"Quick, kill them! Leave no one alive!"

In the distance, a group of White Tiger Lineage members charged forward with overwhelming momentum, chasing down members of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan. Among them, Lin Xun spotted familiar faces—Lian Hongxiu, Lian Feijia, and others.

"Disgusting..."

His gaze turned icy. Without hesitation, he soared into the sky. Endless Taixuan sword qi erupted from the acupoint all over him, roaring forth in that direction.

Rumble!

The sword qi flooded the battlefield like a boundless ocean, displaying absolute dominance.

Within seconds, the boundless sword qi wiped out dozens of White Tiger Clan experts, domineering and unstoppable.

Lian Hongxiu, Lian Feijia, and the others stood frozen in disbelief. Then, as realization dawned, their faces lit up with wild joy. Lin Xun had saved them.

"Bear with me for now." Lin Xun flicked his sleeve and before they could respond, he swept them into the Dao Endless Pagoda.

There was no safe hiding place left in the Thousand Flame Imperial City, so he had no choice but to temporarily shelter them in the pagoda.

Then, without hesitation, he headed toward the outskirts of the city.

Along his path, he encountered numerous White Tiger and Black Tortoise experts, most of whom were below the Emperor Stage. These groups were hunting down Celestial Phoenix Lineage and Divine Forge Imperial Clan members in the city.

Lin Xun showed no mercy. Every enemy in his path was slain without hesitation.

From above, one could see the trail Lin Xun left behind. Wherever he passed, the land was drenched in the blood of the fallen.

Emperors who noticed his presence foolishly tried to take him down, but they were swiftly and effortlessly killed.

Lin Xun wasted no time. He knew very well that even if he killed as many enemies below the Emperor Stage as possible, it would not change the tide of the battle

His true goal was to eliminate the key figures of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans!

.....

Outside the city, the battle raged on, a brutal clash that stretched across thousands of miles, leaving the world in a state of unparalleled ruin.

This was no ordinary battle, but instead a confrontation between Emperors. When their ultimate power collided, the heavens and earth darkened, and all things were reduced to dust. It was a scene of unimaginable terror.

Bai Lingzhen and Wu Xiuxing, leading a group of Emperor Ancestors, had firmly seized the upper hand. As the battle progressed, their advantage grew ever more evident.

The key factor was numbers. While their enemies had only eight Emperor Ancestors, including Xi, Big Yellow and Huang Cangtian, Bai Lingzhen's side boasted nineteen Emperor Ancestors.

Moreover, characters like Bai Lingzhen and Wu Xiuxing, though not at the ninth realm Emperor Stage, were formidable eighth realm Emperors with exceptional combat prowess, making them a significant threat as well.

Despite Xi's unmatched strength and her ability to fend off the attacks of numerous emperors on her own, she could not reverse the increasingly perilous situation.

At this moment, Huang Cangtian was drenched in blood, his injuries critical. Three other Emperor Ancestors were also gravely wounded.

Only Xi, Big Yellow, and three other Emperor Ancestors could still hold the front line.

In contrast, while some of the nineteen Emperor Ancestors had sustained injuries, none were severe. Their advantage remained absolute!

Seeing this, Bai Lingzhen threw his head back and cackled, "Huang Cangtian, I'll give you one last chance. Surrender now, or don't blame us for razing this place to the ground and wiping you all out!"

His voice boomed like a giant bell, shaking the heavens and reverberating across the battlefield.

Hearing this, Huang Cangtian and the others looked grim. The tide of battle had shifted, and collapse seemed imminent.

What worried them even more was that the enemy forces had already breached Divine Forge Workshop A1, and they had no idea what was happening inside.

“Little cats, stop your yapping. I’ll skin you alive, pull out your tendons and cook you into a pot of meat porridge,” Big Yellow sneered.

Despite being surrounded by three Emperor Ancestors and clearly at a disadvantage, its aura remained as domineering and unruly as ever.

“You mangy mutt, how dare you be so insolent? You’re courting death!” Bai Lingzhen’s face darkened, his voice ice-cold. Without hesitation, barked an order to two other Emperor Ancestors. “Go! Kill that bastard first!”

Big Yellow inhaled sharply, “Damn it, do you lot have no shame?”

Dealing with three Emperor Ancestors was already pushing its limits. If two more joined in, how was it supposed to hold on?

Just then, a chilling voice boomed like thunder, “Who’s really courting death here?!”

Lin Xun!

Xi, Big Yellow, Xia Zhi, Huang Cangtian and others locked in fierce battles were all stunned. At such a crucial moment, why had he shown up here instead of staying in the secret realm?

Shua!

The air rippled as a divine rainbow streaked across the sky. Stepping upon its dazzling light, Lin Xun approached, his deep black eyes flashing like cold lightning, as if piercing through the mysteries of the nine heavens.

“Rest assured, everyone. Those old bastards who broke into the Divine Forge Workshop have all been dealt with.”

His words instantly lifted a weight off Huang Cangtian and the others, sweeping away their previous gloom.

Meanwhile, Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and the other old monsters narrowed their eyes, their expressions flickering with doubt.

A mere third realm Emperor dared to utter such outrageous claims?

However, if he was lying, how had he managed to walk out of the city unscathed?

For a moment, uncertainty filled their hearts.

“Young man, who do you think you are? How dare you spew such nonsense? Are you tired of living?” Bai Lingzhen sneered, his voice laced with icy contempt.

As he spoke, he signaled with his hand, “Seventh Elder, go capture that boy.”

An old man in a gray robe withdrew from the battlefield, his cold eyes locking onto Lin Xun in the distance. The aura of an eighth realm Emperor Stage surged around him like a storm.

“Lin Xun, retreat now!” Big Yellow’s face blanched.

Lin Xun only sneered, “Just an old beast. I can kill him with a snap of my fingers.”

The moment those words fell, the old monsters from the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans nearly burst into laughter. *This kid is too arrogant!*

A mere third realm Emperor dares to disregard us! He is clearly courting death!

Even Huang Cangtian and the others, though impressed by Lin Xun’s courage, couldn’t help but feel a deep sense of worry.

After all, the enemy held an overwhelming advantage in numbers and strength. Under such circumstances, only Emperor Ancestor had the qualifications to join in.

But Lin Xun was just a third realm Emperor...

Lin Xun seemed unaware of all this, his expression remaining calm and indifferent. He spoke as if making a casual remark, “Let’s see just how powerful an Emperor Ancestor truly is.”

“Evil creature! You’re only at the third realm Emperor Stage, yet you dare to be so arrogant. Have you lost your mind? Hurry up and die!”

The face of Seventh Elder, an eighth realm Emperor, darkened with fury and he struck without hesitation. A blade wreathed in purple lightning appeared in his grip, slashing downward with devastating force.

Rumble!

The blade light descended like a river of lightning, violently tearing through the air toward Lin Xun.

Lin Xun remained unfazed, “I told you, I can kill you with a snap of my fingers.”

Before his voice faded...

Clang!

A piercing sword hum split the sky. A dazzling sword emerged, meeting the purple lightning blade head-on. The moment they clashed, it was like two comets colliding, sending shockwaves across heaven and earth. The space around them shattered and chaos spread in every direction.

Crack!

In the blink of an eye, the purple lightning blade disintegrated like fragile paper.

Before the Seventh Elder could even react, the dao sword had already ended his life in an instant!

Chapter 2293 The Disregarded Emperor Ancestor

This is bad!

Bai Lingzhen and the others turned ashen-faced. They had never imagined that the battlefield would shift so drastically in the blink of an eye.

With just a single sword strike, a youngster at the third realm Emperor Stage had slain an eighth realm Emperor. It was simply unbelievable!

Huang Cangtian and the others were equally shaken. They had long known of Lin Xun’s unparalleled talent in weapon forging, but they never expected his combat prowess to be just as terrifying.

The gap between the third realm Emperor Stage and the eighth realm Emperor Stage wasn’t a minor difference, but instead was like a vast chasm!

How had he managed such a feat?

Under the blood-red sunset, Lin Xun stood alone, his long black hair billowing in the wind. His presence was like an abyss, unfathomable and boundless, exuding the domineering power of a lone figure standing against thousands.

Clang!

A clear hum resonated through the battlefield as the dao sword returned to the cauldron hovering before Lin Xun. At that moment, the eyes of every old monster locked onto this life-bound Emperor weapon.

One glance was enough to leave them all stunned.

What kind of cauldron was this?

Dao light swirled like mist, vast and eternal, exuding an aura so profound it seemed capable of suppressing the heavens. Its presence alone was enough to make hearts tremble.

Simply hovering there, it radiated an unparalleled majesty like the sovereign of all Emperor weapons. Its power was grand and boundless, capable of shaking the past and present!

At that moment, many recalled the earthshaking visions that had appeared in the depths of the sky not long ago—the huge cauldron bathed in billions of rays of auspicious dao light and overpowering the starry sky!

So this was the treasure behind it all!

Realization dawned on everyone. The life-bound Emperor weapon Lin Xun had forged was the cause of all those strange phenomena.

A wave of greed flickered through the eyes of the old antiques from the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clan.

A supreme artifact like that could stand unrivaled throughout history!

“What a treasure...”

Bai Lingzhen’s gaze burned with terrifying intensity, his expression turning cold. “I can tell that it was this weapon that granted you such power. But does someone like you truly deserve to wield it?”

His voice turned icy as he gave his command, “Third Grand Elder, seize him. Remember, keep him alive. This Lin Daoyuan is an exceptional master of weapon forging.”

The moment his voice fell, a man in blue, who had been locked in battle with an old antique from the Celestial Phoenix Lineage, suddenly withdrew.

Throwing his head back, he let out a booming laugh, “An exceptional master of weapon forging, you say? It just so happens that our White Tiger Lineage is lacking one!”

His voice rumbled like thunder as the mighty aura of an Emperor Ancestor swept across the battlefield, boundless and terrifying.

Boom!

Before anyone could react, the man in blue had already made his move. With a single grasp of his hand, a colossal palm materialized in the sky, blotting out the sun as it came crashing down toward Lin Xun, carrying a might capable of shattering all beneath it.

Xi, Big Yellow, and Xia Zhi, who were locked in fierce battle against a group of Emperor Ancestors, felt their pupils contract sharply.

Huang Cangtian and the others turned pale.

The strike of an Emperor Ancestor—how could it be anything but devastating?

Buzz!

However, the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron roared to life in front of Lin Xun, erupting with torrents of boundless dao light. Like a tidal wave, it surged forward, colliding head-on with the descending palm. A deafening explosion shook the heavens and earth. The impact sent divine radiance surging in all directions, tearing through the void and leaving a trail of destruction in its wake.

However, the most shocking thing had to be that the colossal palm unleashed by an Emperor Ancestor was completely neutralized by the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron!

Everyone turned their heads, shaken to the core.

The might of an Emperor Ancestor was enough to suppress all existences in the Emperor Stage. They stood at the pinnacle of the Emperor Dao, like true ‘towering giants’ who ruled supreme over the heavens.

Yet, a mere third realm Emperor had blocked an attack of an Emperor Ancestor with nothing but his life-bound Emperor weapon. It was unheard of.

Even the man in blue was stunned, his eyes flickering with disbelief.

In truth, what the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron had displayed earlier was the profound wonders of the Dao Flawless Armor—unparalleled defense, unshakable, and infinitely wondrous.

At this moment, Lin Xun’s blood and qi surged violently within him. He had to admit that the power of an Ancestor Emperor was truly terrifying, an insurmountable force.

It should be noted that he had already reached the perfect third realm Emperor Stage and wielded a formidable killing weapon like the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron. Even so, facing an Emperor Ancestor head-on, he still felt an unbearable pressure. It was evident just how extraordinary the Emperor Ancestor Stage truly was.

The title of ‘ancestor’ was like a vast chasm, a barrier that could not be overcome.

However, Lin Xun had never come here intending to clash with Emperor Ancestors in a direct confrontation.

“Old bastard, take this!”

With a long roar, Lin Xun unleashed the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron. A boundless torrent of sword qi shot forth, executing the sword inheritance of Sword Exalt Zhukong.

Shua!

The sword qi flashed—Three Inches of Eternal Silence!

When this sword sutra was wielded through the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron, its power doubled, amplified by the magical effects of the Dao Immeasurable Bottle.

“Hmph!”

The man in blue swung his huge hand, unleashing a surge of law power that swept the sword away like a tidal wave. “Little trash, do you think you’re worthy of challenging me? Surrender now!”

He soared into the sky, his robes billowing around him as he stretched out his five fingers, tearing the very fabric of the void. With a single motion, he reached for Lin Xun, releasing an unparalleled torrent of palm force that crashed toward him like an unstoppable tsunami.

Lin Xun’s dark eyes remained calm and indifferent as he unleashed the full force of his sword inheritances.

He drew upon Sword Exalt Zhukong’s sword techniques: The way of drawing the sword, the way of controlling the sword and the way of the sword heart.

He summoned the power of Taixuan Sword Scripture.

He executed the Momentary Dao-Slashing Sword.

He unleashed No Return.

Each sword inheritance had long been integrated into Lin Xun's cultivation, and as he demonstrated and unleashed them to their fullest extent, they displayed a power unlike anything seen before.

In an instant, sword intent blazed, roaring across the universe, illuminating the nine heavens and flooding the world with its dazzling brilliance.

As an Emperor Ancestor, the man in blue was unafraid, but for a moment, he was restrained by the storm-like barrage of attacks. He could only continue to focus on neutralizing and dispelling them.

Each time he launched an attack, the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron obstructed him, preventing him from getting close to Lin Xun, let alone suppressing or capturing him.

"He..." Bai Lingzhen's eyes widened in disbelief.

Not only him, but all the old monsters in battles nearby, whether friend or foe, were also equally astonished by the sight.

The man in blue felt humiliated and furious.

A high and mighty Emperor Ancestor failed to do anything against a mere third realm Emperor. If word of this spread, it would become a permanent stain on his reputation.

At this moment, Lin Xun flicked his sleeve and summoned the No-Nonsense Bow. *I've been raising you for some time now, so it's about time you show your abilities.*

Boom!

A fierce, ominous aura radiated from the rough, bone-crafted bow. Weapon Spirit Wuque who had been dormant within the No-Nonsense Bow suddenly awakened, appearing as a gray-haired young man out of nowhere.

Wuque gripped the No-Nonsense Bow tightly with four divine arrows strapped to his back—Biluo, Moli, Jiguang and Pianyu. Its body radiated a fierce, menacing aura that was so tangible that it seemed to distort the air around him, making him appear like a god of archery that had descended upon the battlefield.

Many old antiques gasped sharply. *What a ferocious aura!*

"Go help Xia Zhi," Lin Xun commanded.

Wuque's gaze swept across the battlefield, quickly locking onto a distant scene. Thousands of miles away, Xia Zhi and Big Yellow were locked in a fierce struggle against three old monsters at the Emperor Ancestor Stage.

Without hesitation, he flashed forward, but before he even arrived, the Biluo Arrow had already left the bowstring.

Boom!

It felt as if the eternal void was being shredded as the arrow tore through space, leaving behind a sonic boom that reverberated like the wails of gods and demons.

Its sheer power was unparalleled, swift as lightning and unstoppable as crashing thunder.

At the same time, Lin Xun waved his sleeves, and the Broken Blade emerged. With Wuque, the two of them charged toward Xia Zhi and Big Yellow, radiating terrifying killing intent.

Broken Blade, you've already formed a weapon spirit. It's time for you to fight independently. Don't disappoint me...

Boom!

The dull body of Broken Blade burst into a dazzling blaze of light. A wild, untamed aura surged forth, and deep within the weapon, a dormant figure awakened.

Shua!

In an instant, the Broken Blade transformed into a streak of light and shot into the battlefield.

Previously, despite Big Yellow and Xia Zhi working together, they had only barely managed to resist the relentless onslaught of the three Emperor Ancestors. Their situation had been precarious.

However, the arrival of Wuque and Broken Blade changed everything.

Wuque wielded the No-Nonsense Bow, carrying out long-range sniping from an incredible distance using the four divine arrows—Biluo, Moli, Jiguang and Pianyu. His attacks were swift, ruthless, and domineering. His mastery of archery had reached a shocking level.

The divine arrows shrieked through the air, instantly throwing the battlefield into chaos. Even with their immense power, the three Emperor Ancestors still found their rhythm disrupted.

Their faces twisted with fury.

Enraged, one of the Emperor Ancestors broke away from the battle, crossing the void in an instant to attack Wuque. Before he could reach him, the Broken Blade intercepted him.

Boom!

The Broken Blade unleashed a tempest of murderous energy, and with a single slash, the Emperor Ancestor's expression shifted in shock and horror.

Seizing the moment, Big Yellow and Xia Zhi broke free from their disadvantageous situation and mounted a fierce counterattack.

This entire sequence of events unfolded in the blink of an eye, but it was clear to all that with the arrival of Wuque and the Broken Blade, the tide of battle had completely turned in Big Yellow's and Xia Zhi's favor.

However, this was just the beginning. As Lin Xun waved his sleeve, the Sword Case of Rebirth appeared before him.

Without needing a word from Lin Xun, Sword Spirit Yezi emerged and reassured calmly, "Don't worry, Lin Xun. I will give it my all."

Lin Xun nodded and pointed towards Huang Cangtian and the others in the distance, "Yezi, go assist them."

"Understood!"

Before his voice even faded, Yezi's figure had already vanished, racing toward the distant battlefield.

Seeing this, Lin Xun felt a wave of relief.

Over the years, as he continued to nourish them with various Emperor-grade weapons, Wuque, the spirit of the Broken Blade, and Yezi had refined the essence of those artifacts and underwent significant transformations.

Now, it was their time to shine!

Lin Xun's gaze shifted to the battlefield on Xi's side and his brow furrowed.

At that moment, Xi was locked in a fierce battle against five Emperor Ancestors. The fight was intense, and although there was no immediate danger, the situation didn't appear promising.

"Little trash, how dare you disregard me!" echoed a furious roar through the air.

The man in blue, his face dark with veins bulging on his forehead, seemed to be consumed by rage.

In fact, his rage was so intense that it felt as though his lungs might rupture. As he battled Lin Xun, Lin Xun seemed to pay no attention to their fight and instead directed his attention to other battles, even sending reinforcements.

He saw it as disrespect to him, an Emperor Ancestor.

What infuriated the man in blue the most was that, despite his power as an Emperor Ancestor, no matter how fiercely he attacked, he had yet to shatter the sword cauldron shielding Lin Xun...

The insult was unbearable.

If this were to get out, he would become a laughingstock!

Chapter 2294 Deaths of Emperor Ancestors

The furious and exasperated look on the man in blue's face made Lin Xun burst into laughter, "So what if I'm disregarding you? Come and kill me if you dare!"

He sneered, amusement flickering in his eyes.

Endless sword qi roared as the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron unleashed an array of supreme sword arts. Though none managed to wound the man in blue, they forced him to act repeatedly just to neutralize the attacks.

Meanwhile, the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron continued to intercept every strike.

In truth, neither side had managed to land a decisive blow.

For Lin Xun, this was already a heaven-defying feat. After all, as a third realm Emperor, he was holding his ground against an Emperor Ancestor. This was a feat so remarkable that it would leave countless cultivators in disbelief.

Unfortunately, for an old antique like the man in blue who had lived for who knew how many years, this battle would no doubt ruin his reputation.

"I'm going to kill you!"

Enraged, the man in blue activated an Emperor weapon. It was a fiery red dao seal glowing like sunset clouds. The words 'Void Suppressor' were inscribed upon its surface, emanating a terrifying might that surged through the heavens.

"Rise!"

With a single thought, Lin Xun summoned the Dao Endless Pagoda, its supreme power transcending past and present, shaking heavens and earth.

In the blink of an eye, the world trembled and space collapsed with deafening roars.

The man in blue's expression darkened. His life-bound Emperor weapon, the Void Suppressor Dao Seal, had been blocked.

At this point in the battle, he had achieved nothing, not even an inch of success!

The old monsters observing from afar, including Bai Lingzhen and Wu Xiuxing, were both stunned and enraged. Could this level of combat power belong to a mere third realm Emperor?

It was maddening!

Throughout history, no one had ever seen or even heard of a supreme Emperor who could defy the heavens to such an extent.

In the void, Lin Xun stood alone, facing off against an Emperor Ancestor. Not only was he undefeated, but he was also matching his opponent blow for blow!

Huang Cangtian and the others were shaken to their core, their heads spinning from the sheer shock. In the present world, a monster-like heaven-defying being like him was enough to terrify anyone to death!

After all, a third realm Emperor holding his own against an old antique at the Emperor Ancestor Stage was an unprecedented feat.

“Evil creature! Die!”

Suddenly, an enraged roar echoed across the battlefield as another old man charged forward, joining the fight. Wielding a dark blue jade bottle, he looked like a water god incarnate. With a single motion, he unleashed a torrential downpour of mysterious black water, sweeping across the void like a cosmic tide, aiming to drown Lin Xun.

The old man was a top eighth realm Emperor who had been aiding Bai Lingzhen. Now, under Bai Lingzhen's command, he had stepped in to help.

“Old dog, you're not qualified to fight in this battle!” Lin Xun sneered.

The Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron blazed with divine brilliance, releasing billions of divine sword beams as it slashed through the air.

The moment the sword descended, the world dimmed and even ghosts and gods trembled in fear.

Rumble!

A blinding arc of sword qi tore across the battlefield, obliterating all obstructions like rotten wood. With a *pff*, a spray of blood filled the air and the old man's right arm was severed.

A blinding crimson glow erupted, streaking toward the heavens. The old man screamed miserably, his face contorting with shock. He had never imagined that he would be wounded by a youngster the moment he rushed in.

In truth, had it not been for the man in blue holding Lin Xun back, that sword strike alone would have taken his life!

“Get lost!”

The man in blue roared in fury, his rage boiling over. He already felt humiliated and ashamed, and now someone had come out to help. Did they think he couldn't handle a little trash at the third realm Emperor Stage?

The old man's face was ashen. He dared not linger and swiftly retreated from the battlefield.

“It's time to end this.” The man in blue took a deep breath, and in the next instant, torrents of boundless dao light surged from him, quietly condensing into a vast and imposing world.

His fury had reached its peak. He decided to unleash his true strength, The power Lin Xun had displayed was too monstrous. If he was not eliminated today, there would be no one in the world who could restrain him in the future!

At this moment, the man in blue abandoned all restraint.

“Go!”

The man in blue quickly formed intricate hand seals, his hair billowing wildly as the Void Suppressor Dao Seal erupted with blinding radiance, blazing like a scorching sun. Mysterious waves of energy rippled outward, sweeping through the battlefield like a tempest from the nine heavens.

At that moment, the expressions of Xi, Big Yellow, Xia Zhi, and Huang Cangtian shifted with unease flickering in their eyes

“The Third Grand Elder was holding back before, intending to capture that boy alive. But now...he won't show any mercy!”

Bai Lingzhen's voice was ice-cold.

This was a legendary weapon-forging master with combat strength so heaven-defying that he could be called a monstrous anomaly. Even Bai Lingzhen himself felt an urgent need to eliminate him.

Boom!

The Void Suppressor Dao Seal streaked across the void with a piercing roar, unleashing an oppressive force that bore down on Lin Xun.

Despite that, he remained unshaken. On the contrary, as the battle intensified, so did his fighting spirit. Waves of primordial dao source surged through him, fueling his power. His aura was growing ever more terrifying.

The presence of the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron allowed him to unleash his full strength without restraint. The longer he fought, the more fiercely the flames of battle burned within him, and his combat skills sharpened with every clash.

Suddenly, he let out a long roar that resembled the mighty call of a dragon and the fierce cry of a tiger. His long hair billowed as his five dao bodies charged onto the battlefield, merging their power with his true body. Together, they activated the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron.

Shua!

A ray of sword qi shot forth, executing the ultimate power of No Return.

That solitary sword strike erupted into infinite sword intent, slashing across the heavens. Dazzling and unstoppable, it streaked through the sky like a divine bolt of lightning, its brilliance igniting the world.

Bang!

With a deafening explosion, the Void Suppressor Dao Seal was sent flying.

The man in blue staggered backward, forced several steps away by the sheer impact of the sword strike.

For a moment, his expression became unreadable, fluctuating between fury, shock and disbelief. It seemed never in his wildest imagination had he thought that as an Emperor Ancestor, he would be forced back by someone merely at the third realm Emperor Stage!

Rumble!

Heaven and earth seemed to split apart as Lin Xun's aura blazed with unstoppable might. His true body and five dao bodies moved in seamless coordination, unleashing deadly strikes with the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron.

Within moments, the man in blue was forced back a second time.

A wave of gasps and exclamations rippled through the battlefield.

Earlier, their battle appeared to be evenly matched. But now, Lin Xun had seized the initiative, launching a counterattack and repeatedly forcing back an Emperor Ancestor!

Terrifying beyond words!

The battlefield was ablaze with sword intent, with dazzling sword qi piercing through the heavens and earth, weaving the infinite mysteries of the great dao. Their brilliance illuminated the heaven and earth and bathed the land for ninety thousand miles.

A barrage of sword rays rained down, swift and ferocious, forcing the man in blue to continuously evade, his movements becoming increasingly frantic.

“Seeking death!” Suddenly, a gaunt figure in a gray robe shot forward from the group of five Emperor Ancestors besieging Xi, rushing straight toward Lin Xun.

Almost at the same time, Lin Xun shouted, “Xi!”

With just a single word, Xi, who was in the heat of the battle, seemed to understand his intent. A resolute glint flickered in her clear, beautiful eyes.

“Slash!”

Lin Xun, without even a glance at the approaching gray-robed man, commanded his true body and the five dao bodies to activate the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron.

They struck with No Return!

No one noticed that the moment the sword was swung, a mysterious and obscure dao light radiated from Lin Xun.

The man in blue, simply thinking that Lin Xun was determined to fight to the death, grinned sinisterly, preparing to join forces with the gray-robed man to crush him once and for all.

Just then, the power of Time Stopping was unleashed...

Pu!

With a deadly slash, Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron cleaved through the air, unleashing a monstrous wave of sword qi that severed the man in blue at the waist!

Sword qi raged wildly, and the body of this ‘towering giant’ was obliterated, disintegrating into swirling ashes.

Blood rained down in torrents as the battlefield fell silent, stunned by the death of an Emperor Ancestor.

Meanwhile, in another corner of the battlefield, the gray-robed man who had charged at Lin Xun was reduced to nothing but smoke, his body disintegrating inch by inch.

Standing behind him, Xi had been there all along, her figure graceful and transcendent, her robe fluttering, as law power swirled around her in the air.

In that very moment, Lin Xun and Xi had each slain an Emperor Ancestor!

This was the first time since the battle began that an Emperor Ancestor had fallen. And this time, two had perished in an instant.

The once chaotic battlefield, filled with fierce fighting, fell into a heavy silence. A flood of horror and shock swept through the minds of all the Emperor Ancestors present, regardless of whether they were allies or enemies.

All of them trembled with fear!

“How is this possible?” Bai Lingzhen’s expression dramatically changed, his eyes nearly popping out of their sockets, and his old face turned ashen with rage.

The two fallen Emperor Ancestors were from their White Tiger Lineage. The pain of such a devastating loss felt like a dagger to his heart.

“Kill!” Seizing the opportunity, Lin Xun charged toward Bai Lingzhen, his momentum overwhelming, and his body radiating an astonishing, domineering aura.

Simultaneously, Xi launched a powerful counterattack. In a flash, a spear that seemed to embody the very laws of order condensed in her hand as she rushed toward Wu Xiuxing in another part of the battlefield.

The coordination between her and Lin Xun was flawless—one targeting Bai Lingzhen, and the other focusing on Wu Xiuxing. Both knew that if they captured the two patriarchs, the tide of the battle would shift in their favor!

Boom!

The Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron gleamed with billions of rays of divine brilliance, and as Lin Xun rampaged, the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron unleashed a wave of sword qi like a raging river, plunging the world into disorder and ruin.

At that moment, Bai Lingzhen was locked in a fierce struggle with Huang Cangtian. Upon seeing Lin Xun's charge, he immediately retreated, not daring to face him head-on.

The death of the man in blue had made him fully aware of Lin Xun's terrifying power. How would he have the guts to meet him head-on?

Lin Xun would not let him escape so easily. With a thought, endless Taixuan sword qi erupted, engulfing everything in its path.

Bai Lingzhen's face was drained of color. He bellowed in fury, swinging his sword to break through the blockage and fight his way out of the siege.

Boom!

With a collision that resounded like the collapse of the world, divine light exploded in all directions. Bai Lingzhen was violently sent flying by the sword qi, blood spilling from his mouth and nostrils as he stumbled backwards, suffering from a devastating blow.

"Die!" Lin Xun followed up with another strike, moving with unbelievable speed, determined to finish Bai Lingzhen with one decisive blow.

Chi!

Just then, a massive palm seal suddenly condensed out of thin air, crashing toward Lin Xun with the force of a scorching sun.

It was the strike of an Emperor Ancestor!

At the same time, another Emperor Ancestor appeared beside Bai Lingzhen, pulling him away from danger and into the far distance.

Bang!

The violent shockwave of the palm sent Lin Xun's blood and qi churning uncontrollably, forcing him to evade.

Before Bai Lingzhen, who had narrowly escaped death, could even catch his breath, a horrific scream rang out across the battlefield, piercing the air.

Chapter 2295 Reversal

The scream had come from an Emperor Ancestor from the Black Tortoise Lineage.

While attempting to rescue Wu Xiuxing, who Xi was targeting, he ended up getting killed by her instead. He didn't even have time to escape before his primordial spirit was completely wiped out.

This was the third Emperor Ancestor to fall!

Everyone was trembling, especially Bai Lingzhen and Wu Xiuxing. They had just narrowly escaped death yet had to witness such a cruel and bloody scene. Their scalps were numb with shock.

Before Lin Xun arrived, they still had an absolute advantage and believed that they would be able to break through the Thousand Flame Imperial City and slaughter the members of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage in no time.

Lin Xun was just a third realm Emperor that no one had taken seriously. Who would have thought that after he arrived, he could change the entire battle situation with his own strength?!

For example, in just a few moments, three Emperor Ancestors had fallen one after another!

Even for the members of the Four Great Primordial Clans, such as the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans, this was considered an extremely heavy blow.

After all, this time they had come out in full force, and there were nineteen Emperor Ancestors with them.

Furthermore, only some of the Emperor Ancestors had come from the forces under their respective clans.

On the other hand, the experts of the Celestial Phoenix Clan, such as Huang Cangtian, had been feeling low morale and somewhat desperate, but now they were all refreshed and excited, sweeping away their despair!

"Kill!"

In a flash, Lin Xun, who had just been attacked by a palm, rushed towards Bai Lingzhen in the distance again.

His demeanor was confident, and every pore of his body flowed with blazing dao light. Even though his current cultivation stage was far below almost everyone else's, who would dare to underestimate him at this time?

An Emperor Ancestor came to stop him with a palm print that looked like it was burning, resembling a river of fire rushing toward him in a terrifying manner.

Lin Xun battled back with his sword cauldron, fighting hard, and revealing his own attainments in the dao to their peak.

His life-bound Emperor weapon was extremely powerful and heaven defying. It continuously revealed the magical abilities of the Dao Immeasurable Bottle, the Dao Lawless Blade, the Dao Structureless Flag, the Dao Lifeless Seal, the Dao Skyless Spear, and so on. Furthermore, it had integrated them into its sword form, making the power coming from it beyond imagination.

Although Lin Xun was still shocked by the head-on confrontation that made his blood roil and forced him to be passive, the Emperor Ancestor fighting him still could not do much.

This made Lin Xun's fighting spirit burn, and he became more and more courageous.

In the past, if he had encountered an Emperor Ancestor, he could only flee, but now things were different. At least, he could use his sword cauldron and fight against one!

Achieving this step alone was already a sign of extremely amazing progress!

Boom!

The fighting in the entire battlefield became more and more intense, and there were scenes of destruction everywhere. The area within tens of thousands of miles around Thousand Flame Imperial City had long been plunged into an unprecedented destruction, with mountains and rivers gone and the earth sinking.

"You will die!"

Not long after, Big Yellow's roar resounded, as if it was going to shatter the sky.

Then, it appeared, holding a two-meter-long bone stick in its claws as it smashed down fiercely at a mighty black-robed man.

The black-robed man was one of the three Emperor Ancestors who had besieged Big Yellow and the others earlier. Upon seeing this, he waved the silver spear in his hand without hesitation and swept away.

Clang!

The two collided, splashing endless dao light. Suddenly, the silver spear was bent, and the terrifying power of the bone stick burst out, shaking the black-robed man.

Boom!

At the same time, the Biluo Arrow, like a stream of light from the sky, tore through the void. Wuque had obviously chosen an angle and timing that was perfect, arriving just at the moment when the black-robed man staggered.

"Open!" shouted the black-robed man, and the laws in front of him intertwined like a tide, emerging into the embryonic form of a world, abruptly blocking the arrow.

However, before he could breathe a sigh of relief, deadly killing intent rushed to him from both sides.

One was the brilliant and fierce Broken Blade.

The other was Xia Zhi who was taking advantage of the situation.

The black-robed man's expression shifted slightly, but as an Emperor Ancestor, he had fought countless battles, so how could he be trapped by such a situation?

"Break!" he hollered.

His long hair flew as his hands formed seals. Then, two strange dao steles emerged that blocked the fierce attacks from the Broken Blade and Xia Zhi.

"Was that it?"

The black-robed man snorted coldly, his eyes flashing with a lofty and cold arrogance. How could an Emperor Ancestor like him be defeated by a mere ambush?

However, at this moment, someone screamed, "Be careful!"

That sound was like thunder.

The black-robed man's eyes trembled, and he felt a sense of deadly danger for the first time. Without hesitation, he dodged.

Unfortunately, at the same time, Xi had suddenly appeared.

Faster than Xi's appearance was a dazzling and magnificent rain of light that was as mysterious as the law of order as it submerged the black-robed man.

Boom!

In an instant, this Emperor Ancestor had turned into ashes that scattered all over the sky.

From Big Yellow's initial attack, to Wuque's shot, to the Broken Blade's and Xia Zhi's pincer attack, and until Xi appeared out of thin air at the last moment, this series of actions had happened almost in the blink of an eye.

When all this ended, the fourth Emperor Ancestor had...fallen!

Bai Lingzhen and Wu Xiuxing trembled and were about to go crazy. They shouted, "Go and restrain that woman! Quickly!"

They all realized that the real threat was Xi. Once she had gotten out of her predicament, she would be like a trapped dragon ascending to heaven.

Unfortunately, they were obviously a step too slow.

With Xi's ability, there was no way she would be trapped again.

Her figure flashed as it trampled through the battlefield. Although people repeatedly tried to stop her, she broke through their blockade one by one.

Not long after, she suddenly appeared beside Lin Xun. Her fine hands flew, and a dreamy rain of light poured out.

Although the Emperor Ancestor who was fighting fiercely with Lin Xu had reacted immediately and resisted, he was still seriously injured.

How could Lin Xun miss such a perfect opportunity? He immediately slammed his opponent with his life-bound weapon.

Boom!

The severely injured Emperor Ancestor was smashed into pieces. Blood splattered. By chance, only a wisp of his primordial spirit was able to escape, and it let out a furious and shrill scream.

Lin Xun couldn't help but feel a bit of regret. In the end, he knew it was because his cultivation was too low. Otherwise, how could he not kill his opponent after such a great opportunity?

No matter what, this fifth Emperor Ancestor was already seriously injured and on the brink of death. Even if he could recover in the future, he didn't have much combat power at the moment.

Such a scene made Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and other old monsters feel icy cold. The situation had become completely chaotic, and they had suffered repeated defeats.

If this situation continued, their large-scale attack was likely to be futile!

Bai Lingzhen roared, "No matter what, kill your way to where the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor is first!"

Before, they were sure of victory and were not in a hurry, but now, they felt extremely urgent.

Immediately, three Emperor Ancestors pulled away and moved to the location of Divine Forge Workshop A1 of the Thousand Flame Imperial City.

Huang Cangtian and others immediately panicked as their expressions morphed. They wanted to pursue those three without hesitation, but they were almost frantically blocked by other old monsters from the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans.

"I'll deal with them," Xi said as her figure flashed and chased after them.

Halfway there, however, she saw that the three Emperor Ancestors in the distance were being blocked by a fiery red divine flame.

Boom!

The divine flame was like the supreme fire god venting its rage, wanton and overbearing, interweaving with supreme power.

In just a moment, an Emperor Ancestor screamed shrilly as they were burned alive with body and soul destroyed!

The other two Emperor Ancestors had managed to dodge in time and escape, but when they saw such a scene, they were also incredibly shocked.

Only then did they see clearly that the rolling divine flame had suddenly turned into an extremely beautiful figure, exuding unparalleled might.

It was the Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor!

However, the current Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor at this moment was obviously different from what she was before, with a great might that oppressed the heavens.

Obviously, she had inherited and integrated the dao of the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor!

"You...all deserve to die!"

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor's eyes were filled with an extremely cold hatred. As she spoke, a series of flames swept out like a divine chain as it shot forth.

The two Emperor Ancestors looked solemn and chose to retreat without hesitation. The gruesome death of their companion just now was still vividly engraved in their minds, so they dared not fight.

However, as soon as they turned their heads, they saw Xi blocking their escape route. All of a sudden, their hearts plummeted.

Boom!

An inevitable battle broke out.

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor and Xi attacked from both sides. Their combat power was extremely strong and terrifying, and they almost suppressed the two Emperor Ancestors within seconds!

From a distance, when they noticed this occurring, the expressions of Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and the other old monsters of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise clans completely changed, and a cold chill surged in their hearts.

Three more Emperor Ancestors had fallen!

Such a loss was like a lighting bolt appearing in clear skies. It was an irreparable blow to their morale.

The appearance of the Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor was like the last straw that broke the camel's back, causing their fighting spirit to become turbulent.

Everyone knew that they were already doomed!

With extreme reluctance and anger, Bai Lingzhen gave the order in a hoarse voice, "Retreat!"

The remaining twelve old Emperor Ancestor monsters who were left in the field all breathed a sigh of relief. Without a bit of hesitation, they evacuated one after another.

"Want to escape? No way!"

The situation had finally reversed so how could Big Yellow be willing to let the enemy escape? It roared and was about to chase after them.

However, the dog was quickly stopped by Lin Xun, "No need to chase."

It was almost impossible to stop someone at the Emperor Ancestor Stage from escaping.

Furthermore, at this time, Huang Cangtian and almost all of the other powerful experts of the Celestial Phoenix Clan were injured, so it was unwise to chase the enemy.

At this time, Xi and Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor had also arrived. They looked around the whole place and couldn't help but sigh.

This was especially true for Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor, who had a trace of guilt in her eyes, "Sorry... I was a step too late..."

Huang Cangtian and others shook their heads.

They were lucky to survive this time.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

In the distance, Xia Zhi, Big Yellow, Wuque, Sword Spirit Yezi, and the Broken Blade spirit all flew over and gathered around Lin Xun.

Lin Xun secretly felt relieved. At least the people around him didn't suffer any casualties, which made him feel better.

After all, the previous battle at the Emperor Ancestor level was simply too terrifying. If it hadn't been for Xi, the consequences would be absolutely unimaginable.

Use arrow keys (or A / D) to PREV/NEXT chapter

The Prodigies War

Chapter 2296 The Bigwigs from the Other Side of the Cosmos

Mountains and rivers had been broken, buildings had collapsed, and the land was devastated.

The air was still filled with the pungent smell of blood and remnants of war. The former prosperity had now turned into a field of total destruction.

The experts of the Divine Forge Imperial Clan were cleaning up the leftover mess, and their expressions were full of grief and desolation.

In this battle, the armies of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans had been mighty and trampled through Thousand Flame Imperial City, which was equivalent to destroying the Divine Forge Imperial Clan's ancestral roots.

The members of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage were also angry and sad.

For countless years, everyone in the Celestial Phoenix World had respected their clan, and there had never been a catastrophe like today.

Despite that, they were all grateful that their enemies did not get what they wanted, and their clan still had a hope of survival.

As the head of the Celestial Phoenix Clan, even though he was seriously injured, Huang Cangtian did not show any signs of being down or depressed. Instead, he looked firm and calmly dealt with the post-war affairs.

The same was true for those old antiques who were seriously injured. They did not reveal any depressed expressions and were instead taking the time to heal their wounds.

Xi, Big Yellow, Xia Zhi and the others were also resting and recovering their strength.

They all knew that while the enemy had been defeated, this victory was only temporary after all. After suffering such a big loss, the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Lineages would not give up that easily.

If nothing unexpected happened, then the big shot from the Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos would be coming in three days. This was their biggest threat!

"I have inherited and integrated the cultivation legacy of the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor into my own dao. If the big shot from the Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos comes, I will deal with it," said Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor as she talked to Lin Xun with a calm look in her eyes.

"I won't stand by and watch."

Lin Xun took a deep breath. The great calamity that the Celestial Phoenix Lineage encountered was related to Luo Qingxun's situation from long ago. As her son, Lin Xun had a duty to take responsibility when facing such a predicament.

"Aren't you worried that the other party will discover your identity and try to kill you at all costs?" asked Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor.

Lin Xun smiled and responded, "If I am afraid now, then how can I fight my way to the other side of the cosmos and witness the capabilities of the Luo Clan there in the future?"

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor was stunned by his reply and said, "If that day really comes, I will look forward to it and how famous you can be."

The other side of the cosmos was a place where even Emperor Ancestors were eager to go.

After all, it was rumored that only there was a way to beyond the Ancestor Stage and obtain eternal immortality!

After pondering for a long time, Lin Xun couldn't help but ask, "Senior, pardon me for the question, but does the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor...no longer have a chance to undergo nirvana?"

The progenitor had given the Phoenix Flame of Order to him, and his dao had been passed on to Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor. In his opinion, the progenitor wouldn't have done this if he hadn't reached an insurmountable roadblock.

However, Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor shook her head and explained to Lin Xun that the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor decided to undergo a new attempt at nirvana, and told Lin Xun that the dao that the progenitor sought was a great dao that transcended his peers in both ancient and modern times.

Lin Xun was astounded by this revelation. The progenitor had regarded the Phoenix Flame of Order as a shackle, so he resolutely decided to cut off his previous dao and undergo a new attempt at nirvana. What kind of courage must the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor have to make such an earth-shattering decision?

"You don't have to worry too much about this. Take the time to stabilize your cultivation since the important figure from the Luo Clan hasn't arrived yet."

As Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor finished with this, she floated away.

Lin Xun stood there alone, gazing at the desolate ruins for a long time. In the end, he finally retracted his gaze, sat cross-legged, and cultivated quietly.

He still had nearly half of the Primal Chaos Essence given to him in his body, so using it to recover meant that he replenished his strength at light speed.

Within one hour, Lin Xun woke up from his meditation session, and his physical strength had been restored to its peak state.

He then found Huang Cangtian and Lian Jiuxiao and asked for a batch of divine materials to set up the formation. Both happily agreed.

Although Thousand Flame Imperial City had been destroyed, the heritage of the Celestial Phoenix and Divine Forge Clans was still here. This was especially true for the treasures they had accumulated for countless years, which had not been looted by the enemy.

Soon, the divine materials Lin Xun needed were ready.

"Little Five, it's your turn now." Lin Xun decided to set up the Heaven Slaughtering Dao Severing array in front of Divine Forge Workshop A1, and the one who was best at this formation was naturally its array spirit.

"The veins and spiritual sources of the mountains and rivers within thousands of miles of here have been broken. Even if the formation can be successfully made, it can only last for less than an hour at most. Are you sure you want to waste so many divine materials on this?"

Little Five couldn't help but remind him that the value of the divine materials consumed to set up a Heaven Slaughtering Dao Severing array was incredibly costly.

"Enough nonsense and get to work."

Lin Xun knocked on the little guy's forehead. The latter bared his teeth and was very angry for a moment, but finally followed his orders.

Two days later.

A Heaven Slaughtering Dao Severing array was successfully set up, and Lin Xun and others all entered Divine Forge Workshop A1 that was now protected by this formation.

On the same day, Xia Zhi suddenly found Lin Xun and said, "Lin Xun, I may have to undergo another cultivation hibernation session."

Lin Xun was startled by this. "Now?"

Xia Zhi nodded, her voice clear, "If Sister Jingxuan wakes up, remember to ask her to write down the method of having a child."

Lin Xun's lips twitched imperceptibly. If Jingxuan found out about this...how embarrassing would it be?

Without waiting for Lin Xun to react, Xia Zhi snuggled up to him and fell asleep quietly. Her beautiful face under the brim of her hat glowed with a quiet and faintly holy luster.

Lin Xun reached out and gently stroked her cheek, thinking of the times when he was with Xia Zhi in Feiyun Village, and a smile appeared on the corner of his lips.

After a moment, he carefully picked up Xia Zhi and placed her in his own True Self Emperor World.

The Dao Endless Pagoda could be lost by accident.

However, unless he died, there was no way his True Self Emperor World could be destroyed.

...

Two days later.

On the bank of a lake far away from the Thousand Flame Imperial City.

“Right now, we can only wait for the arrival of the esteemed expert from the Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos. Then, we can avenge this loss and wipe out the damned Celestial Phoenix Lineage!”

Bai Lingzhen’s expression was gloomy and ugly.

Near him were a group of old monsters from the White Tiger Lineage, and not far away were old monsters from the Black Tortoise Lineage such as Wu Xiuxing.

As for the eight hundred thousand experts that were led by the two clans, they were now all packed in special treasures and could come out any time to do great damage to their enemies.

Wu Xiuxing’s expression was uncertain as he said, “I’m only worried about whether the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor has awakened from his attempt at nirvana.”

“You should be more worried whether the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor will take this opportunity to escape,” sneered Bai Lingzhen.

Wu Xiuxing did not deny he was wrong.

If the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor escaped, then even if the expert from the Luo Clan on the other side of the cosmos came, it may be too late for their plans.

For the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans, the most deadly threat came from the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor!

This was also the major reason why they had mobilized their troops to invade.

"Didn't they say that the seventh elder of the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos would come today? Why hasn't he appeared until now?" wondered Wu Xiuxing.

Bai Lingzhen also frowned. According to the news, the other party should have arrived today.

At this moment, a gentle voice that resembled a spring breeze sounded slowly, "Are you all waiting for this lofty one?"

Every word, like the sound of nature, made the world glow with a kind of vitality, becoming bright and vivid.

Before the voice dissipated, two figures, one old and one young, emerged silently out of thin air. They were vague and mysterious like a pair of heavenly immortals.

The old man was wearing clothing that had wide sleeves and a wide belt, and he was elegant and thin. His figure was tall, making him resemble a school teacher in the secular world, except for the fact that there was a bright red string tied around his wrist.

The young man beside him was dressed in white and had handsome and elegant features. His long black hair was tied up in a peculiar lotus-shaped bun, and his thin and slender figure was outstanding.

The old man's eyes were gentle and calm, as if he stood aloof from the world.

However, whether it was the Emperor Ancestors present or clan leaders such as Bai Lingzhen and Wu Xiuxing, at this moment, they only felt that the old man was like a towering mountain that could only be looked up to. They felt entirely insignificant.

The young man in white's expression was calm and composed, neither happy nor sad, without any trace of arrogance.

However, in his eyes, it was obvious that he did not view the people present and everything in this world any differently from each other. Although they were all physically seen by him, there was no one he deemed truly worthy of his attention.

This was a kind of peak arrogance!

Almost immediately, Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and the other people who were usually considered to be all-powerful giants stood up and saluted respectfully.

Their expressions were full of respect and piety!

If such a scene was seen by others, they would be shocked and speechless. After all, the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Lineages were both clans born from chaos at the beginning of the primeval era and had ancient and terrifying backgrounds.

Furthermore, the people present from the two clans were like overlords usually, and countless sentient beings in the world looked up to them.

Despite that, they were all acting in a respectful and humble manner!

The reason was very simple: this old man with wide sleeves and wide belt was the seventh elder of the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos, Luo Xingfeng!

Upon seeing this, both Luo Xingfeng and the young man in white looked unperturbed, as if this kind of presentation was no big deal to them.

In fact, they were used to this kind of treatment.

"No need to be polite." Luo Xingfeng waved his hand. Having reached his level, he no longer cared about these mundane courtesies.

Only then did Bai Lingzhen and the others dare to stand up straight, but the respect and awe in their expressions had only increased.

"Tell me about the situation," commanded Luo Xingfeng casually.

Soon, Bai Lingzhen told him all about the battle three days ago, not daring to hide anything.

After listening, Luo Xingfeng looked calm, just said "oh," and turned his head to look at the young man in white beside him. He then said with interest, "Chen'er, in your opinion, how strong is this Lin Daoyuan guy?"

The young man in white said calmly, "He is at the third realm of the Supreme Emperor Stage, wields an extraordinary life-bound Emperor weapon, and can fight against an Emperor Ancestor. Just based on these qualities, he can be considered the top talent in the Emperor Stage in our world."

Although he stated all of these shocking facts, there was no emotional fluctuation in his tone, as if he was just answering a very boring question.

Hearing the young man in white's evaluation, Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and other old antiques were all very upset. Lin Daoyuan was so amazing, but he could only be called a "top talent" in the other world?

Luo Xingfeng nodded with a smile and said, "In this world, it is rare for someone like Lin Daoyuan to have such great accomplishments, but compared with those dazzling true geniuses on the other side of the cosmos, there is not much special about him."

This isn't special enough?

Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and others were getting more and more restless, feeling that their understanding of the world was about to be overturned. What kind of place was the other side of the cosmos...

Chapter 2297 The Challenge of Luo Chen

Just by observing Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and the others, Luo Xingfeng could tell that they had misjudged the situation.

On the other side of the cosmos, anyone capable of catching Luo Xingfeng's eye was undoubtedly a pinnacle existence in the world.

Furthermore, among these pinnacle existences, those who could be called truly dazzling were not merely extraordinary in the conventional sense.

By comparison, Lin Daoyuan might not be particularly special next to those dazzling figures, but it depended on who he was measured against!

However, Luo Xingfeng saw no reason to explain.

With his status, he simply did not bother.

Those who had never trained on the other side of the cosmos could not possibly fathom its wonders.

The young man in white suddenly asked. “Is this Lin Daoyuan still in this world?”

“Yes.” Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and the others nodded quickly.

“Chen’er, are you curious about what Lin Daoyuan is capable of?” Luo Xingfeng couldn’t help but ask.

Among the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos, Luo Chen was one of the most dazzling supreme Emperors of the younger generation. His talent was unparalleled, and his foundation unmatched. He was a prodigy destined for cultivation.

From a young age, he had awakened the Luo Clan’s top-tier innate bloodline talent—Astral Flame Spirit Vortex. In just eight hundred years, he had ascended to the fourth realm Emperor Stage!

His astonishing achievement left even the clan’s elders in awe.

Most astonishing of all, despite the deep arrogance ingrained in his very bones, Luo Chen possessed an unmatched wisdom and composure.

To outsiders, his pride might seem overbearing, as if he looked down on all beneath him. However, those who truly understood knew that this was no mere arrogance. It was an unshakable confidence, the kind of invincible belief that every cultivator of the great dao should possess.

Luo Xingfeng had specially brought Luo Chen here to broaden his horizons, to let him experience the world beyond his own.

“The invincible dao I seek is undergoing a subtle transformation,” Luo Chen said calmly. “This trip, I intend to further refine my cultivation. If I can achieve a great breakthrough within the next hundred years, I will enter the Seven Clans Emperor War and claim new origin law powers for our clan!”

Luo Xingfeng's heart trembled slightly, admiration flashing in his eyes. "What ambition! In the clan, some favor the eldest son, others place their hopes in the third young lady, but I, your seventh uncle, believe in you. I believe that with your talent, Chen'er, you will not disappoint the clan!"

Luo Chen had awakened the talent of Astral Flame Spirit Vortex, an extraordinary talent ranked at the top.

Yet, despite the high expectations placed upon him, Luo Chen remained eerily calm, neither elated nor excited.

"Seventh Uncle, I only know that within our Luo Clan, the most powerful talent is the Grand Abyss Heaven Devourer. Unfortunately...countless years have passed... Ninth Uncle has already fallen in the world of the other side of the cosmos, and Sixth Uncle has yet to capture the traitor, Luo Qingxun..."

As Luo Chen spoke, a trace of sorrow flickered in his eyes.

Grand Abyss Heaven Devourer!

That was the very foundation that had allowed the Luo Clan to stand supreme on the other side of the cosmos, overlooking all beneath the heavens!

Luo Xingfeng's expression turned cold for a moment, as if recalling something from the past. Then, he chuckled lightly, "With the law power our Luo Clan now commands, whether or not we possess the Grand Abyss Heaven Devourer will not affect the foundation of our clan."

Luo Chen hummed in acknowledgment and said no more.

Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and the others had been listening intently to the conversation between the two, but confusion still flickered across their faces.

The Seven Clans Emperor War? The Grand Abyss Heaven Devourer... They simply could not comprehend the significance of those terms.

However, they did know about the traitor, Luo Qingxun.

It was no exaggeration to say that because of her, the Four Great Primordial Clans, White Tiger, Black Tortoise, Celestial Phoenix and True Dragon, had been thrust onto different paths of fate!

"Let's go. It's time to meet the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor, if he has truly awakened... Oh, and Lin Daoyuan as well." Luo Xingfeng decided.

Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and the others felt their spirits lifting, and uncontrollable anticipation rose in their hearts. After today, the Celestial Phoenix Lineage would finally be wiped out...right?

.....

The once prosperous Thousand Flame Imperial City had been reduced to a vast expanse of ruins. Only a handful of structures near Divine Forge Workshop A1 remained intact.

“The fourth realm Emperor Stage is called Pervading Mystery. When I break through to this level, I will face the Illusory Mystery World Tribulation...With my current cultivation, I might be able to break through within three months...”

In the Divine Forge Workshop, surrounded by the Heaven Slaughtering Dao Severing array, Lin Xun sat cross-legged, lost in quiet contemplation.

Lately, he often felt strong signs of breakthrough stirring within him, as though he had touched upon heavenly insights beyond the great dao.

This led him to conclude that he was not far from the fourth realm Emperor Stage.

Nearby, Huang Cangtian and other old monsters from the Celestial Phoenix Lineage conversed with Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor. Their expressions revealed a hint of tension and unease.

Only Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor remained as composed as ever.

Lian Jiuxiao and the others from the Divine Forge Imperial Clan had already been secured. They were not strong enough to contribute significantly in the battle and would only become a burden if they joined rashly.

Meanwhile, Xia Zhi had entered a state of deep slumber once again and wouldn't awaken anytime soon.

At present, the only remaining from his group who could stand with Lin Xun in battle were Xi and Big Yellow.

As for Sword Spirit Yezi, Wuque, and the Broken Blade Spirit, there was still a significant gap between them and true Emperor Ancestor beings. Lin Xun had decided not to send them into battle unless absolutely necessary.

The atmosphere in the Divine Forge Workshop was heavy and oppressive.

Everyone knew that today, a powerful figure from the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos would arrive, bringing with them an immeasurable and deadly threat.

No one could say with certainty that they would be able to withstand this disaster!

“Huang Cangtian!”

Suddenly, Bai Lingzhen, the patriarch of the White Tiger Clan, called out with a cold, cutting voice that rang through the air outside the Divine Forge Workshop, “Lord Luo Xingfeng, the seventh elder of the Luo Clan, has arrived. Why don’t you come out and greet him?”

“If you don’t want your clan to be eradicated, come out here immediately!” The voice of the patriarch of the Black Tortoise Clan Wu Xiuxing also echoed.

Their words were laced with blatant threats!

Shua!

Lin Xun’s eyes snapped open, and his spirit sense surged outward like a crashing tide.

At the same time, Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor, Huang Cangtian and the others stopped what they were doing and turned their attention toward the outside of the Divine Forge Workshop.

In the void, leading the group were Luo Xingfeng and Luo Chen, both dressed in wide-sleeved daoist robes with wide belts. Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and other old monsters from the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans stood by their sides. The sight of such a formidable assembly sent an undeniable chill through the air.

Despite that, all eyes were on Luo Xingfeng and Luo Chen, because everyone knew that they posed the greatest threat.

Lin Xun observed Luo Xingfeng and Luo Chen as well, but he paid little attention to Luo Chen. After a moment of scrutiny, his eyes narrowed slightly.

This old guy’s cultivation is impossible to gauge!

“My clan severed ties with the Luo Clan long ago. No one from the Luo Clan deserves to be welcomed by us in person.” Huang Cangtian spoke, his voice deep and unwavering.

“How dare you?!”

“Do you want to die?!”

Bai Lingzhen and Wu Xiuxing roared in fury, but deep down, they both secretly hoped for Huang Cangtian to maintain such a defiant stance. If he managed to offend Lord Luo Xingfeng, they might have the chance to witness the destruction of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage!

However, Luo Xingfeng remained calm and said aloud, “I came here to see the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor. As for the rest of you...you may leave.”

His tone was unbothered, yet the disdain behind his words made it clear he considered Huang Cangtian and the others insignificant.

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor’s eyes turned cold as she spoke, “The Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor has failed in his attempt at nirvana, and I now wield his cultivation. If you seek him, you will speak to me instead.”

Bai Lingzhen and Wu Xiuxing were taken aback by this claim. Then, they responded with a sneer and shouted, “We want to see for ourselves if he’s truly dead or alive! What proof do you have to back up your claim?”

Their greatest concern was the threat posed by the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor, so they couldn’t simply accept Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor’s statement.

“You’re just like a fox using a tiger’s power, what right do you have to demand proof from me?” Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor’s gaze turned condescending.

The only person she feared here was Luo Xingfeng.

Bai Lingzhen was about to retaliate when Luo Xingfeng dismissed him with a wave of his hand. “I came to this Celestial Phoenix World with a single purpose: to invite the Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor to join me in cultivation on the other side of the cosmos. This is also a great blessing for him.”

After a pause, his eyes flashed a deep, chilling coldness, and he continued, “If my kind offer is rejected, then don't blame me for being ruthless.”

His meaning was unmistakable: The Celestial Phoenix Progenitor Ancestor had no choice but to bow his head and serve the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos, or the Celestial Phoenix Lineage would be wiped out!

The faces of Huang Cangtian and the others darkened.

“Impossible!” Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor rejected the offer without hesitation.

Luo Xingfeng smiled, a chill creeping into his grin. “Among the Four Great Primordial Clans, the True Dragon Progenitor Ancestor committed an unforgivable crime and is now sealed in the depths of the Sea of Sins, but in the end, he has managed to keep the True Dragon Lineage standing. I’m curious to see just how resilient your Celestial Phoenix Lineage is!”

Speaking in a casual and leisurely voice, Luo Xingfeng extended a hand.

Just then, Luo Chen, clad in robes whiter than snow, suddenly interjected, “Seventh Uncle, not just yet. Ask them which one is Lin Daoyuan.”

Luo Xingfeng was taken aback before letting out a chuckle, “Afraid I might accidentally kill the boy? Very well, I’ll let them live a little longer.”

His words sent a chill down the spine of Huang Cangtian and the others. *Has the other party already figured out Lin Xun’s true identity?*

“Young Master, that boy is Lin Daoyuan!” Bai Lingzhen pointed at Lin Xun, his eyes seething with hatred.

Three days ago, Lin Xun’s arrival had turned the tide against their White Tiger and Black Tortoise Lineages, causing their assault to fail and resulting in the deaths of many Emperor Ancestors. How could Bai Lingzhen not hate him?

Shua!

At that moment, Luo Chen’s gaze fell upon the Heaven Slaughtering Dao Severing array, locking onto Lin Xun from afar.

A sinister, piercing light flickered in his eyes. *It’s him. Just from his aura alone, he stands apart from the rest.*

Almost instantly, his expression returned to its usual calm, his white robes billowing slightly as he clasped his hands behind his back. Then, in an indifferent tone, he said, “Lin Daoyuan, do you dare face me in battle?”

Chapter 2298 Astral Flame Azure Sword

The entire place fell into a dead silence. No one had expected that a young Emperor from the Luo Clan would directly call out Lin Xun by name and challenge him!

“Bai Lingzhen and those old monsters must have already informed him about Lin Xun’s strength, yet he remains so fearless. He must have an unshakable confidence in his own abilities.”

Huang Cangtian and the others exchanged glances, their eyes flickering. They could already tell that Luo Chen’s foundation had to be extremely terrifying.

After all, just three days ago, Lin Xun had personally slain an Emperor Ancestor. His heaven-defying combat ability and strength were enough to send even old antiques into a state of terror.

Yet Luo Chen still dared to issue a challenge. It could only mean that he truly believed he could crush Lin Xun!

“Little Friend, you must not agree to this. Once your identity is exposed, the consequences will be unimaginable,” Huang Cangtian quickly reminded Lin Xun.

“No worries.” Lin Xun’s dark eyes held no ripple of emotion as he sent a calm voice transmission, “Elder, if I capture that guy, do you think I can force Luo Xingfeng to retreat?”

Huang Cangtian was stunned by that question.

Before he could even respond, Luo Xingfeng’s voice echoed through the air, “Lin Daoyuan, if you accept the challenge, I will personally guarantee a fair fight and no one will dare to interfere.”

His words exuded certainty, a reflection of his absolute confidence in Luo Chen.

Luo Chen added, “If you perform well, I might grant you a chance to live. If you earn my admiration, I may even take you to the other side of the cosmos.”

There was an unmistakable air of superiority in his voice.

“This...is too much of a favor for that kid!” Bai Lingzhen and Wu Xiuxing felt a surge of resentment upon hearing this. They despised Lin Xun to the core, so how could they possibly accept the idea of him being spared?

Luo Chen simply cast them a glance, but that alone made them stiffen and they dared not utter another word.

“Crush him!”

In the distance, Big Yellow’s eyes gleamed with a bone-chilling light, its expression filled with disdain. Both Luo Xingfeng and Luo Chen’s arrogance had left the dog utterly disgusted.

“Alright!” Lin Xun nodded, then after a brief pause, added, “However, aside from those fighting, no one else is allowed to approach the duel area.”

His caution made Luo Xingfeng chuckle in disdain.

Still, with a casual wave of his hand, he led Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and the others to retreat, clearing a vast space for the battle.

Only then did Lin Xun step forward from within the Heaven Slaughtering Dao Severing array, his expression calm and fearless.

“Don’t worry about the others, focus on capturing that guy first.”

“If anyone dares to interfere, I will strike immediately.” At almost the same time, messages from Xi and Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor reached Lin Xun’s mind.

Lin Xun gave a subtle nod in response.

Outside the array, Luo Chen nodded slightly as he watched Lin Xun step forward. “I commend your courage for accepting this challenge in such a dire situation. However, I know full well that your true intention is to capture me as a hostage.”

He paused briefly before continuing in an indifferent tone, “But, I advise you to abandon that thought and be prepared to fight with everything you have, because if you disappoint me, I won’t hesitate to kill you.”

Xi, Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor, Huang Cangtian, and the others couldn’t help but gasp inwardly. *This young man’s insight is razor-sharp!*

“Oh?” Lin Xun studied Luo Chen with deep, unreadable eyes. “You are aware of the power I displayed three days ago, yet you still provoke me so fearlessly. You also have quite the courage.”

A cold smile tugged at Luo Chen’s lips. “You and I are both supreme Emperors. I stand at the fourth realm, and once the battle begins, I won’t hold back.”

Suddenly, Luo Xingfeng rang out from afar, “This battle is a struggle for supremacy in the great dao. No life-bound Emperor weapons are allowed.”

He remembered what Bai Lingzhen and the others had told him: Lin Xun possessed a terrifyingly mysterious sword cauldron with unfathomable and heaven-defying power.

Luo Chen’s brows furrowed slightly. “Seventh Uncle, please just watch from the sidelines.”

Clearly, Luo Xingfeng’s words had displeased him. *So what if that guy uses his life-bound Emperor weapon? Do I not have one of my own?*

Luo Xingfeng chuckled, “Very well, I’ll simply observe.”

Luo Chen nodded.

In that instant, his aura changed dramatically.

Clad in a robe whiter than snow, his slender figure was handsome, and his ethereal appearance gave off an aura of tranquility, as if he were untouched by the world around him.

However, at this moment he was like a celestial sword piercing the sky, splitting the void—sharp, unyielding, and terrifying.

The world became filled with eerie wails and howls as the void buzzed violently, seemingly unable to withstand the overwhelming force radiating from him.

“Amazing!”

“Young Master’s brilliance is unparalleled!”

Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and the others couldn’t help but voice their admiration, which was part flattery and part genuine awe. Luo Chen’s strength was indeed beyond imagination.

Shua!

Luo Chen’s eyes snapped open, and two golden beams shot forth like two divine swords, wrapped in crackling golden lightning. With a deafening roar, they streaked through the air, hurtling straight toward Lin Xun.

Everyone was frozen with shock. The battle had erupted without a single word exchanged.

Moreover, all Luo Chen had done was open his eyes. The sheer power contained within his gaze, the profound mysteries of his swordsmanship, and everything about him was truly astonishing.

Xi and the others already sensed that Lin Xun was facing an extraordinary and formidable opponent. The fact that the enemy’s cultivation centered around the power of the eyes indicated the unusualness and uniqueness of his dao.

It was as if a thunderclap had struck in the void, causing everyone to stagger and sway violently.

Lin Xun flicked his fingers, sending two dazzling Taixuan sword qi streaking through the air like bolts of lightning. Dao light flared in swirling clusters, blazing with intense brilliance, resembling a torrential downpour.

In the blink of an eye, the two divine swords were shattered, and the sword qi continued its relentless path toward Luo Chen’s eyes.

Clang!

Luo Chen raised his hand, summoning a dense shower of azure rain that transformed into a violent vortex. It crushed the two Taixuan sword qi inch by inch, sparks flying in every direction.

The members of the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans roared in unison, “Kill him!”

Boom!

Luo Chen remained as composed as ever, channeling his cultivation effortlessly. He strode through the void with unyielding steps, his body glowing with blinding azure divine light, while a torrent of law power surged around him, rushing toward Lin Xun with unstoppable force!

At this moment, everyone instinctively held their breath and a hushed silence descended upon the battlefield.

Everyone sensed that this strike would be earth-shattering.

Luo Chen’s presence was akin to a holy sovereign, radiating brilliance with every step. All his power was accumulated into that blow, shaking the sun, moon, rivers, and mountains!

On the other hand, Lin Xun soared into the sky, meeting the attack head-on with a composed elegance. His body was cloaked in a misty dao light, drawing upon the divine power of the great dao.

Rumble!

When the two collided, it was as if a massive tsunami crashed against the shore, or boulders crumbled beneath an unstoppable force. The explosion of dao light and divine brilliance swept through the air, obliterating everything in its path.

The audience winced, their eyes stinging from the intensity of the clash. The two supreme Emperors both possessed heaven-defying powers that far surpassed ordinary understanding.

Luo Chen was domineering and fierce, and each movement of his displayed all kinds of mysterious and terrifying techniques.

Lin Xun was not inferior in any way.

For a moment, the heaven and earth seemed to tremble as if they were on the brink of collapse. Horrific visions appeared, echoing the chaotic primeval era, where gods and demons roamed freely and supreme beings shattered the void, destroying stars with a single wave of their hand.

Boom!

With a thunderous roar, the two figures crossed paths, separating and standing at opposite ends. Their auras intensified, radiating like colossal furnaces illuminating the sky.

Luo Xingfeng's eyes lit up with satisfaction. He knew very well that Luo Chen's strength and foundation were considered extraordinary even among the most formidable beings in the other side of the cosmos.

However, Lin Daoyuan, a third realm Emperor, had managed to contend with Luo Chen. This had caught him off guard.

Since when had such a heaven-defying character emerged in the Celestial Phoenix World?

Clang! Clang! Clang!

An earsplitting roar of swords echoed through the air.

Behind Luo Chen, a series of divine swords materialized, glowing with an intense brilliance. The light they emitted seemed to have a strange power, like a mesmerizing display of colourful light gathering in the void, captivating all who beheld it.

This spectacle was born from the law power condensed from Luo Chen's cultivation. Under his control, the dazzling swords transformed into an ethereal azure hue, like illusory colored glass, exuding an aura of transcendence.

Astral Flame Azure Sword!

Nine divine swords shot forward like streaks of rainbows piercing the sun, rushing through the void with astonishing speed. Their fierce, overwhelming aura shook the heavens and earth.

Dao light roared around Lin Xun, evolving into one dense, intricate Taixuan sword array after another. These formations aligned together and, with a loud boom, they surged forward, colliding with the oncoming attack .

Rumble!

The clash was like the dawn of heaven and earth, thunder rumbling and dao light exploding in every direction.

Faintly, from the depths of the battle, the echoes of primordial gods and demons, meditating Buddhas, and chanting sages seemed to reverberate, adding a strange and terrifying atmosphere to the scene. Between the two, divine power surged and law powers clashed and weaved together like a spider's web.

One manipulated the azure sword with the precision of a sword god descending to earth, while the other unleashed the profound wonders of intricate sword arrays like a divine being weaving the fabric of space, shaping the void around them into a chaotic battlefield of bloodshed and turmoil.

It was an epic clash between two supreme Emperors, a battle of great magnitude in the void. Their powers were unparalleled among their peers, shaking the foundations of history.

The sound of a sword's hum was deafening, as if it could pierce gold and shatter stone. The brilliant azure sword cut through the sky, scattering endless starlight and flames, its destructive power spreading.

Lin Xun countered with his own formidable power, creating complex and mystical sword formations that obscured the heavens and the earth, and enveloped the eight directions.

Their battle escalated from the sky to the ground, then back up to the clouds, with neither side yielding an inch, their strength evenly matched.

Watching from the sidelines, Xi, Big Yellow, and others couldn't help but be astonished. They knew Lin Xun's foundation and strength well. In the Ancient Nebula Road, he stood at the pinnacle, leaving his peers far behind. He was an existence who defied the heavens.

The fact that Luo Chen could match Lin Xun blow for blow proved how unfathomably deep his foundation was.

However, they had a strange indescribable feeling. Lin Xun seemed somewhat restrained, as if he was holding something back in the battle...

Meanwhile, Luo Xingfeng's gaze grew sharper. Lin Xun's strength had shaken even him, forcing him to reassess the condescending view he had earlier.

Despite his surprise, his confidence in Luo Chen remained unwavering!

Rumble!

Heaven and earth trembled with deafening roars as the two clashed in a supreme battle. Locked in a fierce duel, neither yielded an inch. Blood splattered from time to time, making the clash all the more intense and earthshaking.

Lin Xun's expression remained as calm as ever, but the toll of battle was becoming clear. His flesh was tearing apart, cracks appearing on his body.

Chapter 2299 Little Idiot

It should be noted that at the Emperor Stage, Lin Xun's physical body was as tough as divine gold—ordinary Emperor-grade weapons would shatter upon impact against him.

Yet today, he was wounded!

That sight sent shivers down the spines of all who witnessed it.

Luo Chen's relentless assault was simply too terrifying. His azure divine sword sliced through the void with ease, as if space itself were mere paper.

Every strike was followed by a thunderous explosion. How many in this world could endure such a devastating onslaught?

If an ordinary cultivator of the same generation faced him, they would likely be slain in an instant!

Even Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing, and the other old antiques gasped in shock, utterly dumbstruck.

The memory of Lin Xun's battling Emperor Ancestors was still vivid in their mind, yet now he stood wounded before their eyes. The sheer impossibility of the scene left them shaken.

Huang Cangtian and members of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage watched grimly, their expressions solemn. More than ever, they felt just how deep and unfathomable the Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos was. It was home to unparalleled prodigies. Luo Chen alone was proof of how truly terrifying they were!

Of course, everyone keenly noticed that Luo Chen was also injured. His face had paled slightly, his lips pressed into a firm line, and faint traces of blood seeped from the corners of his mouth.

He was clearly trying to suppress the injury, but the truth was undeniable—he had been wounded.

Seeing this, Luo Xingfeng's expression finally shifted. Luo Chen, a fourth realm Emperor with an unrivaled foundation, had actually been injured?

This was something he had never thought possible.

Boom!

Lin Xun's approach abruptly changed. He no longer focused on countering Luo Chen's attacks but instead took the offensive. Each strike was fiercer and stronger than the last, his fists smashing down relentlessly. Though his body was riddled with cracks, with fresh blood streaming down, his assault remained as wild and ferocious as ever.

Waves of fist force surged outward like raging tides, mighty and unstoppable, each as vast as a towering mountain. The dao light radiating from his punches illuminated the heavens, crashing down upon Luo Chen with devastating force.

Pu!

Eventually, Luo Chen could no longer withstand the onslaught. His body swayed, his mouth opened, and with a violent cough, a mouthful of blood sprayed into the air.

“Die!”

Lin Xun let out a low shout, his voice rolling like a thunderclap, causing the void to tremble. In that instant, his fists blazed even brighter, like two divine hammers ready to shatter the nine heavens!

Xi and Big Yellow finally exhaled in relief. This...was Lin Xun's true strength! The previous exchanges were merely a test, where he had fought with restraint.

“He...”

Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and other old monsters were speechless, too stunned to react.

In truth, they didn't dare to utter a word for fear of provoking Luo Xingfeng who stood beside them.

At this moment, a barely perceptible gloom clouded Luo Xingfeng's face.

He cared little for Lin Xun's injuries, but seeing Luo Chen suffer wounds was something he struggled to accept.

Luo Chen was a dazzling supreme Emperor of the younger generation of their Luo Clan with cultivation that surpassed his opponent's. How could he be wounded by him?

Pu—

Before long, Luo Chen could no longer withstand the assault. With another violent cough, a mouthful of red blood splattered into the sky. His body swayed, his steps faltering.

Yet at the same time, multiple sword wounds appeared across Lin Xun's body!

One gash was so deep that bone peeked through, specks of white mixing into the flowing blood. They were bone fragments.

Only then did the spectators realize that both had sustained heavy injuries, and that neither side held the advantage.

In a blink of an eye, the two had exchanged hundreds of blows, yet no clear victor had emerged and both were left riddled with wounds.

“Not bad, you are worthy of my attention. But now, I will show you what a true secret technique is!”

Luo Chen’s eyes flashed a terrifyingly cold light, but his voice remained calm.

A blazing azure flame erupted from his body. The Power of Rebirth surged within him, and in an instant, his wounds vanished.

In the blink of an eye, his body was restored to its peak state as if the injuries had never existed!

He stood tall, unscathed, and his aura seemed to have grown even stronger than before!

Everyone watching was dumbfounded, their jaws slack with disbelief. In an instant, he had returned to his peak condition. No, he was even more terrifying than before!

How could anyone contend with him? How could anyone possibly fight him to the death?

With such a secret technique at his disposal, defeating Luo Chen seemed near impossible, because no matter how severe his injuries, he could instantly restore himself and return to peak condition at an astonishing speed.

For any opponent facing him, it would be an endless nightmare, a battle with no hope of victory!

Swoosh!

Golden ripples spread as waves of dao light surged. Under countless stunned gazes, Lin Xun also changed. His wounds vanished in an instant, and the aura radiating from him surged, becoming even more terrifying than before.

“Huh?” A wave of disbelief ripple through the battlefield as many widened their eyes in shock.

It was the Immortality Grand Dao. In truth, when Lin Xun first mastered this profound grand dao, the first principle he comprehended was the ability to restore vitality and manifest the essence of immortality.

However, in recent years, he had rarely relied on it.

Luo Chen was also taken aback for a moment, but he quickly let out a cold snort, and an unprecedented fighting spirit ignited in his eyes.

As he chanted an obscure dao incantation, a magnificent azure astral flame surged behind him, transforming into a vortex world. Layers of brilliant sparks erupted, swirling into the air, generating a terrifying force of incineration and distortion.

In an instant, heaven and earth twisted, the world seemed to flip upside down, and even yin and yang reversed!

Many people gasped in shock. That was the power of a grand dao talent! Furthermore, this was not just any talent, but an exceptionally terrifying one!

Even many old antiques couldn't help but sigh. The Luo Clan from the other side of the cosmos was indeed truly extraordinary and unfathomable.

The so-called Astral Flame Spirit Vortex was a power that could draw upon the flames of the cosmic stars, creating a vortex of chaotic destruction that inverted the very fabric of heaven and earth. Any living being caught in the vortex would be crushed, their life force obliterated. It was a power of absolute dominance and devastation!

Suddenly, Lin Xun was like a leaf in a raging storm, and the immense power he wielded showed signs of being suppressed and slipping out of his control.

Xi, Big Yellow, and the others felt their pupils contract sharply. The change was so abrupt, so overwhelming, that they couldn't keep their composure.

Rumble!

Lin Xun's hands moved in rapid succession, countering and striking back, his body radiating dazzling dao light as waves of divine power surged around him. His might was undeniably formidable.

Unfortunately, the power of the Astral Flame Spirit Vortex was even more terrifying. It twisted the space and plunged the world into chaos and instability. The crushing force bore down like a roaring mountain, like a surging celestial river that engulfed the sky and submerged the vault of heaven.

Everyone watching trembled in terror. Too powerful!

Luo Chen, now unleashing his full strength, was like an invincible god, dominating the vast void.

Only then did Luo Xingfeng nod in satisfaction, his tense expression easing. A reserved smile curled at his lips. This was the Astral Flame Spirit Vortex, one of the top-tier innate talents in the world.

"It has only just begun, and you're already struggling?" Luo Chen's cold voice rang out, his tone filled with supreme arrogance.

His white robes billowed in the wind, his demeanor transcendent, exuding an aura of absolute invincibility.

He had unleashed his full power. It was so powerful that any ordinary cultivator would have been crushed to dust long ago.

Lin Xun had clearly fallen into a passive state, like a lone leaf drifting in a raging ocean, seemingly moments away from being torn apart.

“Don’t celebrate too soon!”

To everyone’s surprise, despite being caught in such a perilous situation, Lin Xun remained as calm and composed as ever. His hands moved swiftly and continuously, forming intricate seals, as he flawlessly executed his dao and dharma.

Even though he had fallen into a passive position, Luo Chen was unable to land a decisive blow on him.

Frowning, Luo Chen intensified his assault.

Between them, divine power raged, and countless laws emerged, morphing into the sun, moon and stars that filled the sky.

The battlefield had become a realm of pure dao and laws, where earthshaking collisions shook the void like ancient stars collapsing, sending shockwaves across the heavens. It was a truly terrifying spectacle.

Very quickly, people noticed that although Lin Xun remained in a passive position, Luo Chen still couldn’t break through his resistance, let alone kill him.

“That boy is unusually stubborn.” Luo Xingfeng’s expression darkened slightly. He had expected a swift and decisive victory for Luo Chen.

At this stage in the battle, Luo Chen’s patience had worn thin. He no longer wished to be entangled with Lin Xun. With a thunderous roar, his hair stood on end and his entire being seemed to erupt in flames. Billions of star-like dao flames burst forth, illuminating the nine heavens in a dazzling spectacle.

Such power sent a chill down many spines. His aura alone was so terrifying that it was beyond belief, so overwhelming it made the void tremble, so menacing and domineering that it dominated the battlefield.

“Die!”

He threw a punch with explosive force, and billions of astral flames surged forth, condensing into a fist seal as brilliant as the sun. Its radiance seemed to melt the very fabric of space, leaving behind a trail of countless black holes. The devastating incineration force raged, making even many old antiques tremble.

This punch alone was powerful enough to split heavens and earth, to incinerate all things in the world. It was invincible, radiating a power capable of annihilating everything in its path!

Xi, Big Yellow and the others felt their hearts tighten.

Even Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and the others were visibly shaken. If they hadn't witnessed it with their eyes, they would have never believed that a fourth realm Supreme Emperor could unleash such heaven-defying power!

The power of that punch triggered a feeling of impending doom within them.

"Not bad!" Luo Xingfeng's eyes flickered with an odd glint, and a satisfied smile spread across his face.

Bang!

The moment Luo Chen's devastating punch neared Lin Xun, it suddenly disintegrated into a cascade of light, dispersing like mist in the wind. Lin Xun's robes fluttered from the residual force, yet he remained completely unharmed.

What happened?

The battlefield fell into stunned silence, and many nearly leaped up in shock.

Luo Xingfeng's triumphant expression stiffened, the smile freezing on his lips.

Even Luo Chen's pupils contracted in disbelief, as if he had been struck by lightning. How could...how could a strike that contained all of his power be destroyed so easily?

At this moment, Lin Xun had already vanished from where he stood—only to reappear directly in front of Luo Chen. Seizing the moment while Luo Chen was still in a daze, Lin Xun unleashed a palm strike.

Luo Chen let out a roar, frantically mustering all his strength to counter it. His eyes flashed with an urgent glint.

However, at this moment, his full-strength defense crumbled like paper. Lin Xun's palm strike tore through his power and sent dazzling sparks bursting in all directions.

Compared to before, the power of this strike was more than twice as powerful.

This is bad!

Luo Chen's heart pounded wildly and his face paled. A chilling realization struck him. He had been tricked.

Unfortunately, just as he attempted to retreat, Lin Xun's massive hand suddenly shot forward and grabbed him by the neck, holding him up into the air like a helpless chick.

It happened so quickly and suddenly. Xi and Big Yellow and even Luo Xingfeng were all completely caught off guard.

By the time they reacted, Luo Chen, the dazzling supreme Emperor from the Luo Clan's younger generation had already been firmly subdued!

Meanwhile, a cold chuckle escaped Lin Xun's lips as he met Luo Chen's resentful, enraged gaze. "Little idiot, that battle just now was just to amuse you?"

Use arrow keys (or A / D) to PREV/NEXT chapter

Chapter 2300 Identity Exposed

The words 'little idiot' made Luo Chen's pretty face flush red with rage, his eyes practically spitting fire. "You cheated!"

Every syllable dripped with manic fury

At this moment, Luo Chen fully understood that in their fierce battle just moments ago, Lin Daoyuan had never used his full strength. Instead, he had deliberately feigned weakness to lull him into carelessness before capturing him in one decisive strike.

Despicable! Too cunning!

The entire battlefield was stunned by the sudden, shocking turn of events.

In an instant, Lin Xun had subdued Luo Chen with absolute, unstoppable dominance. The moment was so fast and unexpected that before anyone could even react, Luo Chen's furious roar had already echoed through the air.

Xi, Big Yellow and the others were all dazed, their expressions turning strange. Then, realization dawned on them. Lin Xun had deliberately masked his strength, drawing Luo Chen into a false sense of security before seizing victory in one clean strike!

"How dare he?!"

"Hurry! Rescue Young Master Luo Chen!"

Angry shouts rang out as Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and the others erupted in fury. Luo Chen had been captured so quickly that even they had been caught completely off guard.

Meanwhile, Luo Xingfeng's expression had darkened considerably. A terrifyingly oppressive aura radiated from him as he locked eyes with Lin Xun. "What a treacherous little thing! You feigned weakness to strike when your opponent was unprepared. Even I was deceived!"

Lin Xun held Luo Chen firmly and spoke with an air of calm indifference, "Old man, if I weren't concerned about your presence, I could have killed someone like him in the blink of an eye. Why would I have gone through all this trouble?"

From the very beginning, he had known that with Luo Xingfeng watching, capturing Luo Chen alive in direct combat would be nearly impossible.

Moreover, Luo Chen had already caught on to his intentions, so he had no choice but to take a different approach.

Luo Chen's face burned with both shame and fury. Only now did he fully realize that Lin Xun hadn't deceived him simply to lull him into carelessness, but instead because he was wary of Luo Xingfeng!

In other words, Lin Xun had never truly taken him seriously from the very start!

At this moment, important figures of the Celestial Phoenix Lineage such as Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor and Huang Cangtian also reacted and couldn't help but marvel at Lin Xun's move, deeply impressed.

No matter how powerful Luo Xingfeng's cultivation was, he likely had never expected that Lin Xun, who had seemed suppressed before, would suddenly explode with such overwhelming strength.

"Lin Daoyuan! If you dare harm a single hair on Young Master Luo Chen, I will grind you to dust!" Bai Lingzhen roared furiously.

Lin Xun raised an eyebrow. Before Luo Xingfeng even spoke, this old dog is already barking louder than anyone else.

Crack!

Luo Chen's wrist bones shattered under Lin Xun's grip. The pain sent cold sweat trickling down his forehead, draining all color from his face.

"You..." Bai Lingzhen's eyes bulged with shock. Lin Xun's action was as if telling him, forget a strand of hair, he could cripple Luo Chen on the spot. What could he do about it?

"Keep barking, and I'll continue." Lin Xun's voice was casual, yet the underlying threat was bone-chilling.

“Enough!”

Luo Xingfeng’s expression had returned to an eerie calm. His gaze swept over Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor, Huang Cangtian and the others, “Your Celestial Phoenix Lineage is bold. Very well, I will give you a choice. Tell Lin Daoyuan to release Luo Chen and in return, I guarantee that this time I will only take the Progenitor Ancestor of your clan and I will spare the rest of your clan.”

His chilling voice echoed through the clouds, each word carrying an undeniable weight.

Huang Cangtian and the others wore grim expressions. Only capture our Progenitor Ancestor? That old man is simply going too far!

Crack!

Luo Chen’s other wrist snapped, causing a furious, almost maddened roar. “Lin Daoyuan, kill me if you dare!”

Despite that, Lin Xun didn’t even spare him a glance. Instead, he spoke in an unhurried tone, “Old bastard, I’ll give you a choice as well. Kill those old guys from the White Tiger and Black Tortoise Clans, and I promise I won’t humiliate this supreme Emperor of your Luo Clan any further.”

Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing and the others turned ashen-faced as they gasped in realization. That guy is trying to kill with a borrowed knife!

Luo Xingfeng’s brows furrowed, his expression dark and murderous, “Lin Daoyuan, do you have any idea what price you’ll pay for this?”

Crack!

Luo Chen’s ankle was snapped with a sickening crack, sending a violent convulsion through his entire body as agony consumed him.

Lin Xun then said leisurely, “Old bastard, if you think Luo Chen isn’t important, then go ahead. If he is, then kill those old guys.”

Luo Xingfeng glared at Lin Xun for a good while, as if struggling to suppress the raging killing intent within him. Then, after taking a deep breath, he slowly turned his gaze toward Bai Lingzhen and the others beside him.

“Lord, please don’t fall for that brat’s trick!”

Bai Lingzhen and the others trembled all over, their voices laced with desperation as they quickly pleaded, “Even if you kill us, he definitely won’t let Young Master Luo Chen go.”

In their hearts, they all hated the fact they couldn't tear Lin Xun apart alive!

Just then, Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor stepped forward and raised a strange beast bone talisman. "Swear upon this talisman that you will never stand as enemies against our Celestial Phoenix Lineage again, and I will guarantee you leave with him alive."

At the same time, Xi silently took her place beside Lin Xun.

"The life bone of the Heaven Wrath Beast?" Luo Xingfeng's eyes narrowed as he recognized the talisman's origin, his expression shifting indefinitely.

"Seventh Uncle, kill them!" Luo Chen's face turned livid as he bellowed. "A part of my soul is preserved within the clan. Even if they destroy me now, I can still recover in the future!"

The words sent a wave of unease through Lin Xun and the others.

"No." Luo Xingfeng shook his head without hesitation. "Once your body and primordial spirit are destroyed, even with a wisp of your soul, it would be nearly impossible to restore your previous cultivation and skills."

Just then, Luo Chen suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood. With a buzz, an extremely terrifying force erupted from within his imprisoned body.

Shua!

A dazzling, razor-sharp flying blade shot out from the crown of his head, aiming for Lin Xun's skull at terrifying speed.

They were already in close proximity, and the sneak attack was so sudden that the spectators turned pale in shock.

Boom!

Despite that, Lin Xun seemed to not notice it. The sword cauldron materialized before him, radiating a divine aura that resembled primordial chaos. With a violent clash, it knocked the flying blade aside, sending it spiraling away.

The thrilling spectacle had yet to conclude when a sudden, earthshaking roar rang out—"Die!"

Luo Xingfeng charged forward like a raging storm, causing an explosion across the void with a thunderous boom. A force of unimaginable destruction swept down like a collapsing mountain, crushing everything in its path.

Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor was the first to react, igniting the sky with an overwhelming blaze, vast and magnificent.

Unfortunately, within moments, she was sent hurtling backward, blood trickling from the corner of her lips. A sharp gasp escaped her as shock filled her eyes. That old man's cultivation is truly terrifying.

At the same time, Lin Xun's sword cauldron fiercely roared downward.

Bang!

Luo Chen was shattered to pieces, blood raining down like a scarlet storm. His primordial spirit was instantly imprisoned within the Limitless Abyss Sword Cauldron, leaving him with no chance to escape.

"Chen'er!" Luo Xingfeng's eyes turned bloodshot and his beard bristled. With a roar, a wave of terrifying power erupted from him like a volcano, causing even the nine heavens to tremble and the mountains and valleys within a hundred thousand miles to quake violently.

Like a madman, he thrust his palm forward.

Lin Xun had no way to evade such a terrifying strike, but at that critical moment, Xi appeared, swiftly pulling him away from danger.

Boom!

The area where Lin Xun had just stood exploded violently, a massive void fissure tearing through space—jet black and chilling to the core.

Many onlookers broke into cold sweat. Luo Xingfeng, in his rage, was utterly terrifying. His power had clearly surpassed the limits of the Ancestor Stage!

This entire sequence of events unfolded and ended in the blink of an eye, so fast it was beyond belief.

No one had expected Luo Chen to act so ruthlessly and desperately, launching a flying blade to assassinate Lin Xun in an attempt to break free.

However, Lin Xun's reaction was even faster. Without hesitation, he suppressed Luo Chen completely with the sword cauldron.

Even so, the most terrifying presence was Luo Xingfeng. Though outwardly refined and elegant, the moment he acted, his power was enough to shatter the heavens and overturn the world.

Even someone as mighty as Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor had been blasted back by a single strike!

If Xi had not intervened at the last moment, Lin Xun would have likely been killed on the spot.

“You all...deserve to die!”

Luo Xingfeng’s aura surged violently, roaring through the sky as his bloodshot eyes burned with fury. He was truly enraged.

Boom!

Heaven and earth fell into chaos. With a single step forward, the sun and moon tumbled, the mountains and rivers collapsed, and unparalleled divine power erupted like a raging sea, sweeping outward with crushing force.

His unleashed power was enough to make even Emperor Ancestors despair!

At this moment, Lin Xun remained unusually calm. His eyes held a look of unwavering determination as he called out, “Elders!”

Xi and Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor immediately understood. Without hesitation, they unleashed their full strength, striking with all their might.

In that instant, the world became eerily still, as if frozen.

Boom!

Like the heavens collapsing and the earth splitting apart, boundless divine light erupted, engulfing everything in a blinding storm of devastation that shook the nine heavens. The explosion of power was so intense that the entire battlefield turned into an expanse of whiteness, drowning everything from sight.

Even the Emperor Ancestors present felt a piercing pain in their eyes, their minds gripped by boundless shock and terror.

Bang!

Lin Xun staggered, his body swaying before collapsing to the ground. Though he had narrowly escaped destruction, the sheer force of the impact still struck him, wreaking havoc on his body from within. A mouthful of blood spilled from his lips.

On the battlefield, Xi’s figure flickered like a phantom, weaving through a shimmering rain of law power, while Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor was like a firestorm, blotting out the sky and sun.

Their aura churned chaotically, their gazes locking onto the same point.

There—as the smoke and dust dispersed, Luo Xingfeng’s towering figure came into view—mutilated, drenched in blood, half of his head blasted apart, his appearance utterly gruesome.

The most terrifying part was that he was still alive!

Lin Xun couldn’t help but draw a sharp breath. That old bastard is truly terrifying.

Even Xi and Thousand Fire Spirit Emperor were visibly shaken. With their combined all-out assault, they could have obliterated any Emperor Ancestor in existence.

Yet now, Luo Xingfeng had only been severely wounded!

“Grand Abyss Heaven Devourer...it’s the Grand Abyss Heaven Devourer!”

Luo Xingfeng’s voice was filled with rage and shock. His one remaining eye burned with fury as he locked his gaze onto Lin Xun. His hoarse voice seethed with madness, “You’re the descendant of that traitor Luo Qingxun! You’ve awakened the second stage of the innate bloodline power Time Stopping!”

It was as if everything had suddenly become clear to him, as if he had gone mad with realization.

His deranged state sent chills down the spines of Bai Lingzhen, Wu Xiuxing, and the others. The son of Luo Qingxun? Innate bloodline power Time Stopping?

So this was Lin Daoyuan’s true identity!

However, Lin Xun showed no surprise at being exposed. Wiping the blood from the corner of his lips he said in a cold voice, “Since you already know about the innate bloodline power Time Stopping, how many times do you think you can withstand another attack like that?”

Use arrow keys (or A / D) to PREV/NEXT chapter